

THE
INVISIBLE SPY.
BY
EXPLORALIBUS.
VOL. II.



DUBLIN:

Printed for ROBERT MAIN, Bookseller, at
Homer's-Head in Dame-street.
MDCC LV.

19. *Leucosia* *leucostoma* (Fabricius) *leucostoma* (Fabricius) *leucostoma* (Fabricius)

SPUDS & SPUDS

A circular postmark from Paris, France, featuring the text "PARIS" at the top and "10 OCT 1900" in the center, surrounded by a decorative border.

Allegro vivace, con anima

united 25

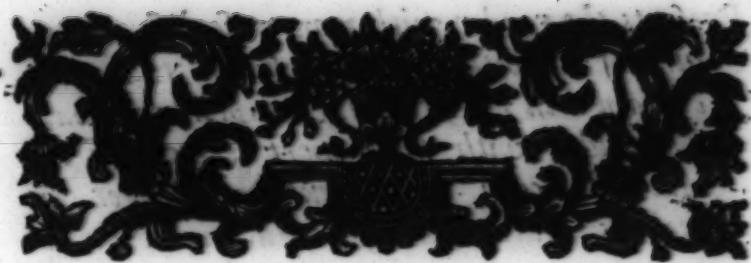


BRIEF HISTORY OF THE CHURCH

Con-

T
1

Con-



CONTENTS

TO THE

Second VOLUME

BOOK V. CHAP. I.

THE Author's introduction to this volume
consists only of an apology for making
no introduction at all, and his reasons for
that omission. p. 1

CHAP. II.

Contains such matters as, it is highly probable,
will be the least pleasing to those for whose
service it is most intended. 3

A 2

Presents

C H A P. III.

Presents the reader with a very foolish adventure of Lysetta's, to which all that was contain'd in the preceding chapter was only a prelude; with some short remarks of the Author's own on the extreme danger, as well as infatuation, of consulting Fortune-tellers of any kind, and giving credit to their idle and absurd predictions. p. 12

C H A P. IV.

Contains the catastrophe of an affair, which the repetition of ought not to give offence to any one, except the person whose resentment the Author will not look upon as a misfortune. 22

C H A P. V.

Treats on various matters, some of which, the Author dares venture to assure the public, will hereafter be found not only more entertaining, but also of more consequence than at present they appear to be. 36

C H A P. VI.

Contains such things as are not often to be met with, neither in the one nor the other sex; yet are, or at least ought to be, equally interesting to both. 45

C H A P.

CONTENTS.

C H A P. VII.

The Author has been in some debate within himself, whether he should insert or not, as he is conscious it will be little relish'd by the fashionable genteel part of his readers;— and what is still worse, can afford neither much entertainment, nor much improvement to the others.

55

C H A P. VIII.

Wherein the wonderful power of beauty, when accompany'd with virtue, is display'd, in a very remarkable, as well as affecting occurrence.

67

C H A P. IX.

Contains only a continuation of the same narrative, begun in the foregoing Chapter, and will not be concluded in this.

80

C H A P. X.

The catastrophe of this adventure cannot fail of exciting compassion in the breasts of my fair readers, and also afford much matter of speculation to those of the other sex.

90

A 3

BOOK.

B O O K VI. C H A P. I.

Is dedicated entirely to the ladies, as it relates an adventure which nearly concerns them to take notice of.

p. 101

C H A P. II.

Contains the conclusion of a narrative, which I am certain there is one person in the world who cannot read without being fill'd with the most poignant remorse, unless he is as dead to all sense of humanity as of honour.

115

C H A P. III.

Consists of some farther particulars relative to the preceding adventure, which came to the Author's knowledge after the departure of Matilda from London; with two letters wrote by that unfortunate lady to her husband in her exile, which it is hoped will not be an unwelcome present to the public, especially to those who have hearts not utterly incapable of being affected with the woes of others.

136

C H A P. IV.

The Author having found some thing in his rambles, which he supposes may be of some value to the right owner, to shew his readiness to restore it, condescends to take upon himself the office of a Town-Cryer;—but waves the ceremony of the great O-Yes three times repeated.

144

C H A P.

CONTENTS.

vii

CHAP. V.

Turns chiefly upon the subject of Education, and contains some things which the Author is apprehensive will not be very agreeable to the Female part of his readers, whether of the elderly or the more youthful class, yet may serve as a useful admonition to both.

p. 156

CHAP. VI.

*The Author expects will make a full attem-
ment to the ladies for the too much plain
dealing, as some of them may think of the
preceding chapter.*

167

CHAP. VII.

Contains the recital of an adventure, which, perhaps, will not be found the less, but the more interesting, for its being not altogether of so singular a nature as some others in this work may have appear'd.

172

CHAP. VIII.

*Contains a brief account of the effects that were produced by the good intentions of the Invisible Spy, with some other subsequent particu-
lars.*

186

BOOK

B O O K VII.

C H A P. I.

THE Author, contrary to his expectation, finds himself under a necessity of making an introductory Preface to this Book, and at the same time presents the Reader with two letters of a pretty extraordinary nature. P. 191

C H A P. II.

The Author flatters himself will be no unacceptable present to all those of the fair sex, who are either truly innocent, or would preserve the reputation of being so. 200

C H A P. III.

Presents the reader with the catastrophe of an adventure very different from what the beginning may have given him reason to expect. 211

C H A P. IV.

Contains the rehearsal of a conversation which the Author accidentally happen'd to be witness of, and looks upon himself as bound by an indispensable obligation to make public; though perfectly conscious, from his observations

CONTENTS. ix

tions of mankind, that there are a very great many of his readers who will labour all they can to bring these pages into discredit.

p. 227

CHAP. V.

Presents the reader with the detail of a very remarkable incident, which, I believe, if considered with a due attention, there are but few people, especially of the Fair Sex, who will not find themselves enabled to become better members of society by having perused.

240

CHAP. VI.

Which, according to the Author's opinion, stands in no need of a prelude, as it contains only the sequel of an adventure too interesting to all degrees of people not to demand the attention of every reader.

249

CHAP. VII.

Is somewhat more concise than ordinary, but very much to the purpose, and will be found not the least worthy of any in the book of being regarded with attention.

263

CHAP. VIII.

Presents the public with the account of an incident which cannot but be deeply affecting to the youth of both sexes, and no less remarkable

X CONTENTS.

markable in its event than any of the Author's Invisibilityship ever enabled him to discover.

p. 270

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Contains a brief detail of such occurrences as presented themselves to the Author's observation in an evening's Invisible ramble thro' several parts of this metropolis. 298

CHAP. II.

Relates some farther incidents of a pretty particular nature, which fell under the Author's observation in the same evening's Invisible progression. 308

CHAP. III.

Tho' it appears to be no more than a continuation of the same evening's ramble, yet it presents the reader with an adventure of much more importance to the public than any contained in the two last foregoing chapters.

320

CHAP. IV.

Relates some passages, which, if the Author is not very much mistaken in his conjectures, will draw sighs of compassion from many a tender heart of both sexes. 330

CHAP.

CONTENTS. xi

CHAP. V.

May possibly become the subject of some future Comedy, as there is nothing in the story that can be objected to by the Licence Office. 339

CHAP. VI.

Will put a final period to the suspense of my readers, in relation to Clerimont and Charlotte. 347

CHAP. VII.

This the Author has calculated chiefly for the speculation of the serious part of his readers, and is short enough to be easily passed over by the more gay and unattentive. 355

CHAP. VIII.

Contains such a sort of method for the cure of an amorous constitution, as perhaps there are more ladies than one who will not think themselves obliged to the Author for revealing. 361

THE

1950

37.200

In

The
on
al

S

—on
disco
been
folla

F
book
havin
with
finds
cant
trod
read

O
lic v
V



THE
INVISIBLE SPY.

BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

The author's introduction to this volume consists only of an apology for making no introduction at all, and his reasons for that omission.

SINCE my setting about this work, I have seen several late treatises that are half taken up with introductory Prefaces to the public; — on a serious examination to what end those long discourses were penn'd, they seem to me to have been occasioned either by one or the other of the following motives :

First, That an author having contracted with his bookseller for a certain number of sheets, without having well consider'd whether his head be stored with subject matter to make good his engagement, finds himself under a necessity of filling up the vacant pages by saying something by way of an introduction, preface, or advertisement to the reader.

Or, secondly, That fearing the eyes of the public will not be sufficiently open to the merit of his

VOL. II.

B

per-



performance ; or, perhaps, not have the curiosity even to look into it at all, he thinks proper to bespeak their favour by a pompous prelude, and sounds his own praises, like a trumpet at the door of a Puppet-shew.

Now I am too great a lover of liberty ever to bind myself by any such slavish agreement ; the first of these incentives is quite out of the question, and cannot possibly have any weight with me.

And as to the second,—As a more perfect knowledge of myself, than I perceive some others have, will not permit me to be over vain in any thing I do, so the indolence of my nature will not permit me to be over anxious for the success.

Besides not having the temptation of the motives aforesaid, I have more adventures to relate than can be easily crowded into this volume, therefore have neither time nor paper to spare for an address, which would afford so little satisfaction to myself in the writing, and perhaps less to my reader in the perusing.

It may, indeed, be said, that as I gave some account of myself in the beginning of this work, it would be no more than good-manners to take a decent leave of the public at the end of it ; but to this I must have leave to reply, that there is a wide difference between coming and going :—when a man intrudes himself into strange company, it certainly behoves him to tell the business that brought him there ; but when he has done that, and has no more to say, I believe every one will allow that it is the best good-breeding to quit the place without ceremony, as I shall do.

C H A P. II.

Contains such matters as, it is highly probable, will be the least pleasing to those for whose service it is most intended.

THERE is, according to the wise man's phrase, a folly under the sun, which, in my opinion, has as little to be said for it as any one of the many others of the present age,—and that is,—an insatiable inquisitiveness into future events, as if the fore-knowledge of what is to come would enable us either to alleviate or avert the decrees of Providence.—Well does Mr. Dryden ridicule this propensity, when he says,

‘ If fate be not, then what can we foresee ?
‘ And how can we avoid it, if it be ?’

Yet are all ages, all degrees of both sexes, tainted, more or less, with this epidemic frenzy.—It cannot but afford the most astonishing, as well as melancholy reflections, in a thinking mind, to observe how many impostors, in and about this great town, are maintained by pretending to the art of divination, while the industrious followers of lawful occupations perish for want of due encouragement.

As I was one day on my Invisible Progressions, I accompany'd a mingled crowd of people into a house situated in one of the most obscure parts of the city :—at first I imagined that this was some private chapel, where persons resorted to pay their adorations to the Deity in a manner not authorised by the government ; but was soon convinced of my mistake, when, instead of a pulpit and desk, I found the room we came into furnished only with globes and telescopes, and other implements of a toothsayer and astrologer.—On looking round me

these lines of Dr. Garth's came immediately into my head :

- ‘ An inner room receives the num’rous shoals’
- ‘ Of such as pay to be reputed fools :
- ‘ Globes stand on globes ; volumes on volumes
‘ lie,
- ‘ And planetary schemes amuse the eye.
- ‘ The sage in velvet chair, here lolls at ease,
- ‘ To promise future health for present fees :
- ‘ Then, as from Tripod, solemn shams reveals,
- ‘ And, what the Stars know nothing of, fore-
‘ tels.
- ‘ One asks how soon Panthea may be won,
- ‘ And longs to feel the marriage fetters on :
- ‘ Others convinc’d by melancholy proof,
- ‘ Enquire when courteous fates will strike ’em
‘ off :
- ‘ Some by what means they may redress the
‘ wrong,
- ‘ When fathers the possession keep too long :
- ‘ Others would know the issue of their caule,
- ‘ And whether gold can solder up the flaws.

I had not patience to stay to hear what idle predictions this oracle would spout forth, especially as I had no acquaintance with any of these who I saw came to consult him ; so took my leave of the deceiver and the deceived, full of indignation against the one, and a pity, mingled with contempt, for the other.

However, as the most learned of all ages have always allow’d that the stars have an influence over the affairs of this sublunary world, it must be confess’d that those men who profess the science of Astrology have the most plausible pretence of any among the various tribes of fortune-tellers, for the impositions daily practised on the credulous part of mankind.

But what can be said in defence of the understanding

standing of those people, who waste their time and money in consulting those abject dealers in futurity! —Creatures who would make you believe they can read the most hidden decrees of fate in the grounds of coffee, tea, chocolate, or powder-blue; nay, even in the dregs of cherry-brandy! —I had often heard much talk of these she-conjurors, but not till I was convinced by the testimony of my own senses, could ever be brought to believe that persons endow'd with a liberal education could descend so far as to listen to their inconsistent prate, much less give credit to what they utter'd.

But so strong is the desire of looking into the seeds of time, especially among the fair sex, that sometimes the most proud, as well as the most nice and delicate, will throw aside all consideration of what they are, or would be thought, and for the sake of being told their fortune, send for, care for, and associate themselves with the very lowest and most dirty wretches in human nature.

Lysetta is descended from a very ancient and honourable house; —she lived, till considerably turned on the wrong side of thirty, without discovering the least inclination for marriage, much less gave any room for the most censorious ever to suspect she encouraged any private gallantries, and the whole tenor of her conduct was such as no one could imagine her capable of harbouring any notions beneath the dignity of her birth and character.

A long acquaintance gave me the privilege of visiting her pretty frequently, and never was deny'd access; —I was one day at her house when she had no other company than a young lady with whom she was extremely intimate; —while we were drinking tea her woman came running into the room, and with a very significant tone of voice said, — ‘ Madam, the woman you know of ‘is below.’ — ‘ Tis very well, reply'd Lysetta,

‘ shew her into my chamber, and bid her stay a little ;’---then turning to her friend, they smil’d on each other,---nodded,---winked, and seem’d very big with some secret between themselves.

I found by all this that my presence might very well be spared at this time, so turn’d down my cup after the second dish and took my leave.---As I was going down stairs, I heard Lysetta order herself to be deny’d to whoever should come that evening ; which convincing me of what I before had reason to imagine, that there was something more than ordinary in hand, I resolved, if possible, to fathom the mystery.

Accordingly I went home, popp’d on my Invisible Belt, put my Tablets in my pocket, and return’d with all the speed I could ;---a lazy footman lolling against a post, with the door wide open behind him, gave me an easy entrance into the house :--- I very well knew the situation of Lysetta’s chamber, and went directly thither ;---but, to my great mortification, found the ladies had bolted themselves in, and all I could distinguish of what was doing, for some time, was only the horse bass of a loud laugh from Lysetta, and the squeaking treble of a shrill te-hee from the other.

I stood sentinel, however, at the top of the staircase, and, at last, was happily relieved,---Lysetta open’d the door,---rang her bell, and call’d to her woman to bring clean cups,---having now gain’d admittance, I soon perceived what they were about ;---a coffee-pot upon the table,---the dregs of the liquor it had contain’d pour’d into a basin,---several cups with more figures on the inside than Chinese makers had japan’d on the outside, and the yet recent circles they had left on being whelm’d down on a damask napkin spread on one corner of the table, presently inform’d me they were employ’d in the art and mystery of Dutch conjuration,

tion,—properly, indeed, so call'd, as it was first introduced, among many other equally laudable customs, from Holland into England.

The priestess of these farcical rites was a mean habited, ill-look'd woman, and though not old had her nose saddled with a pair of spectacles almost as big as the tops of the cups she pretended to inspect.—She was placed between the two ladies, who seem'd to treat her with the greatest marks of freedom and civility.

Lysetta, I found, had been so complaisant to her friend, as to let her be first served; but it was now her own turn, and fresh cups being brought, and the coffee-oracle having judiciously pour'd the quantity of a tea-spoonful into each, the lady took it into her hand, threw out the liquor three different ways, and whelm'd it on the cloth, turn'd it round as many times, and to close the ceremony, struck it a slight blow on the bottom with her two fore fingers.

All being concluded, the prophetess took up the first with the most solemn air,—look'd stedfastly into it, then on *Lysetta*, and after having repeated this several times, at last deliver'd her predictions in these terms:

Fortune-teller. ‘ I see a ring, madam;—your ladyship will be married.’

Lysetta. ‘ ‘Tis rather a mourning ring;—some of my kindred or friends perhaps may die.’

Fortune-teller. ‘ I can say nothing as to that, madam, as yet;—but I am positive what I see here is a wedding-ring, for there is a heart just by it, and a little farther there is a great house, with a high wall and a pair of gates;—your ladyship will have some gentleman that has a fine seat in the country;—it looks almost like a castle.’

Lysetta. ‘ I know nothing of it;—but what else do you see?’

Fortune-teller. ‘ Here is a man, madam, that
• seems to bring you money;—here are papers too,
• I do not know but they may be bills.’

Lysetta. ‘ Very likely; for I expect my banker
• here either to-day or to-morrow.’

Fortune-teller. ‘ Then here is a bundle of some-
• thing brought to your ladyship’s house.’

Lysetta. ‘ Oh,—that is a new sack I have mak-
• ing;—But is there nothing more?’

Fortune-teller. ‘ Not in this cup, madam;—but
• I will look into the next.’

Lysetta. ‘ Do, for you have told me nothing of
• any consequence.’

Fortune-teller. ‘ There is a great deal here, ma-
• dam, I can perceive already;—here is a gentle-
• man sitting in an easy-chair, leaning his elbow
• upon the table, and his head upon his hand, and
• seems to be in a deep study.’

Lysetta. ‘ Pish,—what’s this to me?’

Fortune-teller. ‘ Yes, madam, it is a great deal
• to you; for here is your ladyship, and the very
• same gentleman upon his knees before you;—
• you turn your head away, and look a little scorn-
• ful; but he has you by the hand.—Bless me!
• here you are both together again,—he is talking
• very earnestly to you;—I never saw any thing so
• plain;—your ladyship may see it yourself.’

In speaking these last words she held the cup to
Lysetta, and with a pin pointed out the eyes, the
nose, and mouth of the pretended figure; but
Lysetta push’d it from her, and said,

Lysetta. ‘ I never could see any thing in a cup
• in my life;—but what sort of man is he?’

Fortune-teller. ‘ Pretty tall, madam,—well
• shaped,—very genteel,—has a fair complexion,
• and somewhat of a languishment in his eyes.’

Lysetta. ‘ I cannot recollect that I know any
• man who answers this description.’

Fortune-teller.

Fortune-teller. ‘ I scarce think you do, madam, at present ; but your ladyship may take my word for it, that you will see and be courted by such a one ; for here is a figure of three over his head, —it must be either in three days, or three weeks at farthest ;—let me consider ;—aye, —the moon was at the full yesterday ;—this event must happen before she enters into her last quarter ;—but the next cup, it may be, will shew it more clearly.’

With this she took up the third cup, but had no sooner just look’d it into than she set it down again, clapp’d her hands together, and cry’d out,

Fortune-teller. ‘ Bless me !—now I am positive your ladyship will very soon be married ;—here is an altar,—and a book upon it,—and a parson,—all as exact as if they were drawn by a pencil.’

She then took up the cup again, and perceiving Lysetta began to look a little more serious than she had done, went on in this manner :

Fortune-teller. ‘ Well—this is wonderful indeed ;—of all the cups I ever turn’d in my life, I never saw any thing like this ;—here is your ladyship hand in hand with that same gentleman who I told you was in the other ;—I would now swear that your ladyship will be a wife before any one imagines you have any thoughts that way.’

Lysetta. ‘ I have a very good opinion of your skill, yet am certain you are mistaken in this prediction ; for to tell you the truth, I am resolved never to marry.’

Fortune-teller. ‘ Your ladyship may resolve what you please, but if the stars resolve to the contrary, all your resolutions will come to nothing ;—madam, there is no resisting fate, this gentleman is ordain’d to be your husband, and how much so ever you may set yourself against it,

the decrees of destiny are inevitable, and you must submit.'

Lysetta. ' Oh, heavens! whether I will or not!'

Fortune-teller. ' Undoubtedly, madam, — there is no withstanding the superior powers, and those things which we think the farthest removed from us, are frequently the most near at hand; so that design what you will, — resolve what you will, — it is all in vain; your ladyship is ordain'd to be a wife, and the gentleman I see in these cups must be your husband.'

Lysetta. ' You put me in mind of what the poet says,

The power that ministers to God's decrees,
And executes on earth what he foresees;
Call'd providence, or chance, or fatal sway,
Comes with resistless force, and finds or makes
its way;

Nor kings, nor nations, nor united power,
One moment can retard th' appointed hour:
For whate'er we mortals hate or love,
Or hope, or fear, depends on powers above:
They move our appetites to good or ill,
And by foresight necessitate the will.

The young lady, who had done nothing but laugh'd all this time, now first open'd her lips to speak, and corroborated the truth of *Lysetta's* quotation with another of equal authority.

Young Lady. ' Ay, my dear, as the inimitable charming Cowley tells us in one of his poems: An unseen hand makes all our moves:

And some are great and some are small;
Some climb to good, some from good fortune fall:

Some wise men, and some fools we call;
Figures, alas! of speech; for destiny plays us all.

Fortune-teller. ' I am not book-learned; — I cannot pretend to say any thing to these wise men's arguments; but I know my business as well as any

‘ any she that professes it ;—what I say may be depended on, — and I would wager a thousand pounds, if I were mistress of that sum, that lady Lysetta will be marry’d in a very few weeks.’

Lysetta. ‘ Well, but if such a thing should come to pass, do you think I should be happy in the change of my condition ?

Fortune-teller. ‘ There is nothing in the cup, madam, that shews the contrary ; but I shall be able to tell your ladyship more after you are married.’

This answer of the woman so much diverted me, that it was with some difficulty I kept myself from bursting into a loud laughter, which if I had done, the ladies would certainly have been more astonish’d than at any thing had been said to them by the Fortune-teller ;—however, this accident did not happen, and I restrain’d the risible muscles so as to make no report that an Invisible guest had been witness to this private conversation.

The cups having been all examined, the prophetess, after receiving a handsome gratuity for her trouble, took her leave, and left Lysetta and her fair companion to reason between themselves on the wonders of her art ;—but my Christaline Remembrancer being now quite full, it is not in my power to relate the particulars of their discourse ; and can only say, that they both seem’d to give an implicit credit to every thing she had pretended to reveal.

I was very much surprised to find, that persons of good understanding in other things, could suffer themselves to be imposed upon by such stupid stuff ; which, I confess, I then believed had no other meaning in it than to get a trifle of money from such who are weak enough to be amused with it ; but it was not long before I was convinced of the falsity of my opinion in this point, and that those

wretches

wretches have sometimes a farther and more wicked design in their pretended prophecies.

C H A P. III.

Presents the Reader with a very foolish adventure of Lysetta's, to which all that was contain'd in the preceding chapter was only a prelude; with some short remarks of the author's own on the extreme danger, as well as infatuation, of consulting Fortune-tellers of any kind, and giving credit to their idle and absurd predictions.

Having discover'd this folly in Lysetta, which before I could never have imagin'd, I began now to be censorious enough to suspect she might also be guilty of others, and therefore took it into my head to make her some Invisible Visits, at those hours in which it was likely her behaviour was most unguarded.

In order to satisfy my curiosity in this point, I went to her house one morning, and found her very busy in looking over some new pamphlets, which had been just sent her by her bookseller:—as I always thought the most certain way to form a true judgment of a woman's mind, was in the knowledge of what sort of reading she was most delighted with, I was glad to perceive that this lady made choice of only such books as shew'd her neither a wanton or a coquette, and returned all those which by their titles discover'd the least tendency to prophaneness or obscenity.

After this she took her little ivory folding-stick, and began to open the leaves of one which she seem'd most impatient to examine; but before she had gone through half the number of sheets it contain'd, was interrupted by a footman who presented her with a letter, and said the person who brought it waited for an answer;—I slipp'd behind

her

her chair while she broke the seal, and the contents were as follow :

To the honourable LYSETTA.

May it please your Ladyship,

MADAM,

“ I hope your goodness will pardon the liberty a
“ stranger takes in writing to you; but as I
“ am not so fortunate to be acquainted with any
“ person who can introduce me to your ladyship,
“ I am obliged to become my own solicitor, and
“ most humbly request you will allow me the pri-
“ vilege of waiting on you this afternoon, if no pre-
“ vious engagement intervenes between me and my
“ desires, having something to communicate which
“ is of the utmost moment to the peace of him who
“ has the honour to be,

“ With the most profound respect,

“ MADAM,

“ Your ladyship’s

“ Sincerely devoted

“ and obedient servant,

“ ORSAMES.”

Lysetta seem’d a good deal confounded on reading this little epistle; and after pausing a while, argued with herself in this manner :

Lysetta. ‘ Good God! if this should be the man
‘ the Fortune-teller told me of!—she said I should
‘ hear or see something of him within three days,
‘ and this is but the second since the prediction:—if
‘ I was sure he was the person she mentioned, I think
‘ I ought not to give him leave to visit me, at least
‘ not on his first requesting it.— Yet I should be
‘ glad, methinks, to see if he any way answers the
‘ description she gave of him;—besides, if I should
‘ refuse him, some accident or another would bring
‘ us together; for it is certain that there is no such
thing

‘ thing as disappointing fate ; --- Why therefore should I keep myself in suspense ? --- no, I will see him, and hear what he has to say ; --- it may be he may come upon some other business than what I imagine, — and then it would be vastly silly in me to avoid him. --- Whoever he is, or whatever his designs are, it can be of no prejudice to me to see him once ; --- he cannot run away with me ; cannot have me against my will.’

She then call’d her servant, and bid him tell the person who brought the letter, — that she should be at home in the afternoon, and at leisure to be spoke with by any one who had business with her.

The fellow ran down, but had scarce time to deliver the message he was charged with before she repented of it, as may be seen by this exclamation :

Lysetta. ‘ Lord ! what have I done ! if he is really the person I take him to be, he must think me strangely forward in so easily granting him admittance.’

While she was speaking this she ran to the staircase with an intent to retract what she had said ; but a second thought withholding her, she turned back into the room, and cry’d out,

Lysetta. ‘ What a fool I am ! --- he does not know that I have consulted with a fortune-teller, nor that I have any reason to guess at the business that brings him hither ; — Why therefore should I shun him ? — What shame can my seeing him reflect upon me ? — it will be time enough for me to forbid his visits when he has declared himself my lover.’

How long she would have continued in that mind is uncertain ; — two ladies came in that instant to desire her company with them to the Park, being a fine clear morning ; to which she consenting, I left them to their promenade, and went home,

but

but with a full resolution to return in the afternoon, and see what event the expected interview would produce.

But how greatly was I disappointed? — I had no sooner entered my apartment than I received a letter requiring my attendance at a judge's chambers that same afternoon, at four o'clock, which was the very time in which it was reasonable to suppose Lysetta's new guest would be with her: — the affair I was sent for upon, however, was of too much consequence to be hazarded for the sake of satisfying an idle curiosity; but I do not remember I was ever more vexed in my whole life.

Having dispatched my business, which indeed happened somewhat sooner than I expected, I put on my belt of invisibility and went to the house of Lysetta; — I saw a chair waiting, but the door was shut, and I was obliged to stay in the street for a considerable time, I believe not less than an hour, before it was opened for any person, either to go in or out.

I got entrance at last, and passed directly to the dining-room, where I found the person I was desirous of beholding; — on my looking earnestly on him, I saw he had so much the resemblance of the picture drawn for him by the fortune-teller, that I presently perceived she must be better acquainted with his features than the cups could make her, and that in reality she was a marriage-broker, under the disguise of a coffee-grounds calculator.

He had placed himself very close to Lysetta on a settee, and must have been making a declaration of love to her by the answer she gave just as I came into the room.

Lysetta. ‘Sir, it does not become me to hearken to any professions of this nature, from a person to whose family, fortune, and character I am so an entire stranger.’

Orfanes.

Orfames. ‘ It will be easy for me, madam, to give you full satisfaction in all these particulars; but till I can do so, I beg you will permit me, at least, to convince you of my passion.’

Lysetta. ‘ Tho’, Sir, there is no room to doubt, either by your appearance or behaviour, but that you are a gentleman and a man of honour, yet I should be glad, methinks, to know some person with whom you are acquainted.’

Orfames. ‘ Unfortunately for me, madam, there is not one soul in this town who can give any account of me:—this, perhaps, you will think somewhat odd; but permit me to give you a short sketch of my history, and you will cease to wonder at it.’

Lysetta. Then, pray Sir, oblige me so far.’

Orfames. ‘ It is no boast in me, madam, to assure your ladyship that my family is among the number of the most ancient in England, having been settled here long before the conquest, and many of them been bishops, judges, and privy-councillors; but my father, taking some disgust at the measures in a late reign, resolved to quit his native country for ever; and to that end sold the seat of his ancestors, with a very considerable estate in Somersetshire, and carried the purchase money, together with his whole family, to Philadelphia, where he had then a brother, reputed the most wealthy merchant in that place;—it was there, madam, I was born, and am the only surviving issue of my parents, and consequently the sole heir of their possessions, as also of my uncle’s, he dying without leaving any child behind him.--- I fear I tire you, madam.’

Lysetta. ‘ No, Sir, I beg you will go on.’

Orfames. ‘ From my very infancy there was somewhat in my nature which could not relish the manners of these Americans, though born among

among them ;---I had read a great deal, and heard much more concerning England, and had always a passionate desire to come to it ; but my father, even after my arriving at maturity, would never listen to any intreaties I made him on that score :-- after his death, my uncle was no less averse to my removal ; but on his demise, finding myself freed from all dependency, and entirely master of my own actions, I left all my effects to be disposed of by a person whose integrity I am well assured of, and taking with me only a thousand guineas, just for present use, embarked in the first ship that sailed for England, where I happily arrived about six weeks since.'

Lysetta. ' But would it not have been better, Sir, that you had staid at Philadelphia till your affairs had been settled ?'

Orfames. ' Not at all, madam ; I have friends there that will manage for me as well as if I were there in person ; --- besides, an irresistible impulse hurried me to England ;--- I could not then account for my impatience, but am now convinced it was my guardian angel called me to behold in reality that lovely face I have so often seen in dreams.'

Lysetta. ' What, dream of me !'

Orfames. ' Yes, madam, though so many leagues distant, my spirit has been often with you, --- conversed with you, and avowed that flame my mortal part now feels.'

Lysetta. ' Is it possible !'

Orfames. ' True, by Heaven !'

Lysetta. ' And are you certain I am the same you saw in your sleep ?'

Orfames. ' I could not be deceived ; --- the first moment my eyes were blest with your divine presence at the Chapel Royal, I forgot the solemnity of the place, and the pious business that

‘ that had brought me thither ; and as the poet
says,’

When I attempted to say my prayers,
Began my prayers to Heaven,
And ended them to you.

Lysetta. ‘ ‘Tis very wonderful ; ---- but ‘tis
time enough to talk of these things. ---- As you
have related to me the former part of your life.
I would like to know in what manner you intend
to regulate the future.’

Orfames. ‘ That must be submitted to my
charming directress ; --- all my affairs, as well as
my heart, must henceforth be at your disposal. ---
I had thoughts, indeed, of purchasing a small
estate, of about fifteen hundred or two thousand
pounds a year ; --- but whether I should put the
remainder of my fortune into the public funds,
or lay it out on an employment at court, I had
not yet determined.’

Lysetta. ‘ Oh, by all means buy a place at
Court ; --- the Court is the only Heaven upon
Earth.’

Orfames. ‘ Next to your company I believe
it is ; and since you approve the thought, shall in-
fallibly pursue it.’

Lysetta. ‘ Whoever you marry, Sir, will
doubtless be of my opinion.’

Orfames. ‘ Ah ! do not wrong my faithful
heart so much as to imagine it capable of being
charmed by any other fair ! --- No, --- if all my
love, my services, my prayers, should fail to
move the adorable Lysetta, I vow an eternal ce-
libacy.’

Lysetta. ‘ You men always talk thus when you
would impose on the credulity of our sex ; ---
but, Sir, it is time alone that is the true touch-
stone of sincerity.’

Orfames.

Orfames. ‘ Madam, it is, and to that, employed in my assiduities, and your own goodness I shall trust the decision of my fate ; --- therefore, I once more implore your permission to repeat my vows, and pay you the tribute which beauty like yours demands from love like mine.’

Lysetta. ‘ I will not hear so much of love ; --- but as you are a stranger in town, and as yet have no acquaintance, I cannot be uncharitable enough to refuse you the privilege of visiting me sometimes.’

Orfames. ‘ Heavenly creature ! but it is in this humble posture I ought to thank your goodness.’

With these words he threw himself upon his knees, and catching hold of both her hands, pressed first the one and then the other to his lips with the greatest appearance of transport ; --- all which she suffered, nor discovered the least reluctance ; --- I know not how long he might have continued in this mute courtship, if the sound of somebody at the door had not obliged him suddenly to rise.

It was Lysetta’s servant, who immediately entered and presented her with two letters, which had been just left her by the post ; --- she looked on the superscriptions, then threw them carelessly on the table, without shewing any impatience to examine the contents ; but her lover, either thro’ politeness, or because he had acted enough of his part for the first time, thought proper to take his leave, saying he would do himself the honour to wait on her the next day.

He was no sooner gone, than she began to give a loose to those agitations which his presence and discourse had occasioned in her mind, and which she had not without great difficulty restrained from being visible.

It was in these terms she expressed herself, which incoherent as they are, I shall deliver them to my readers,

readers, just as I found them the next morning engraved on my Tablets.

Lysetta. ' Well, this is the oddest accident ! ' sure there was never any thing so astonishing ! --- ' let people say what they will,---there is a great deal in the throwing of a cup ; --- that woman is certainly the devil ; --- how exactly she described this gentleman.--- I have said I would never marry, but if the stars have ordain'd it otherwise, it is in vain for weak woman to resist ; and if his fortune be such as he pretends it is, I can see no cause for any one to blame me.'

Here she stopp'd, and fell into a little reverie ; but soon coming out of it, thus renewed her ejaculations.

Lysetta. ' There is nothing in the person nor address of this new lover, but what is perfectly agreeable, --- and I believe I shall like him well enough on a little more acquaintance with him ; --- he seems vastly charm'd with me ; but one ought not to build on what the men say on these occasions.--- There is something strangely particular, indeed, in his dreaming of me without ever having seen me : --- in fine, the more I consider, the more I find the hand of fate is in this business, and I must submit.'

After this she seem'd somewhat more composed, and began to read the letters she had received ; --- I also look'd over them at the same time ; but found they were only from relations, of family affairs of no moment to the public, or to the narrative I am reciting.

When I came home, had thrown myself into my easy-chair, and began to ruminate on the extraordinary scene I had been witness of, I knew not whether the base design, which I now plainly perceived had been concerted between the fortuneteller and Orfames, or the weakness and infatuation of

of Lysetta in giving credit to their romantic lies, had the most right to engross my amazement.

But when I reflected more deeply on the various impositions I daily saw practised in the world, my wonder ceased, on account either of the fortune-teller or the fortune-hunter, and fix'd itself entirely on the simplicity of Lysetta.--- It now seem'd not strange to me, that the most illiterate and abject wretches should be endow'd with a natural store of cunning, which, back'd by impudence, renders them capable of forming contrivances to deceive ; else how do we so often see common pick-pockets and house-breakers circumvent the watchfulness of the most cautious ? but then those sort of pilferers rob us when our heads are turn'd another way, or when we are sleeping in our beds ; but in listening to fortune-tellers we are defrauded with our eyes broad open, and give, as it were, our own consent to the worst kind of theft, that of stealing away our understanding.

People guilty of this egregious folly, when detected in it, pretend they consult those ridiculous oracles for no other end than merely to divert themselves, without believing, or even remembering afterwards one syllable of the predictions delivered to them.--- This may, perhaps, at first be true ; but there are too many instances which prove that custom, by degrees, turns into earnest what might once be meant but as a jest.--- The reason is this :

Those subtle creatures frequently find means, either by emissaries they employ for that purpose, or by insinuating themselves among the servants, to get into the secrets of families, and one real fact, serving to make all they say believed, gives them the power to work the person who depends upon them almost to any point they aim at.

The most pernicious designs have been carry'd on this way.--- Husbands have been set against their wives,

wives, and wives against their husbands ;—parents have been made to disregard their children, and children to forget all obedience to their parents ;—the best matches have been broke off, and the most disproportionable ones made :—in fine, there is no kind of mischief but what has happen'd when a Fortune-teller has been bribed by some base person, who has an interest in bringing about such events.

Therefore, as I think there is a law in force against these pretended dealers in futurity, I cannot help saying, that I regret its not being executed with greater punctuality ; since the more simple an evil appears, the more dangerous it proves in its effects.

C H A P. IV.

Contains the catastrophe of an affair, which the repetition of ought not to give offence to any one, except the person whose resentment the author will not look upon as a misfortune.

LYSETTA was so strongly persuaded in her mind, that it was her fate to marry Orsames, that she made not the least attempt to check the growing inclination she had for him, but rather thought it a virtue in her to encourage the most tender sentiments for a person ordain'd by Heaven to be her husband.

I made several visits to her, both in my Visible and Invisible capacity, and seldom went without finding Orsames there, and every time more free and degagee than before.---He made so swift a progress in his courtship, that in less than a fortnight he became the Major-Domo of her family, ---commanded all the servants, and behaved as if already their master, as indeed he was in every thing except the name.

To add to all this, Lysetta suffered him to conduct

duct her to all public places ;--they took the air together in the Mall, Kensington-Gardens, and Hyde-Park, and sat in the same box at the Play-house ; he always dined and supped with her, whatever other company were there:---in a word, they were never asunder but in those hours when decency obliged them to be so.

So strange a revolution in the behaviour of Lysetta made a great deal of noise in town ; all her acquaintance were surprized ;—all her friends and kindred were very much alarmed at it ; especially as the person to whom she shewed these extraordinary favours was altogether unknown in the world, nor could they get the least account of him.

Those, who either through a long conversation or affinity of blood, could take the privilege of discoursing with her on this head, did it in a very free manner ; but the answers she gave to their interrogatories were far from being satisfactory to them ;—when she told them his history as he had related it to her, they treated it with contempt ;—some said,—that he was an impostor ;—others more modest, that they wished he was not so :—to both which she returned,—that whatever he were, she was certain it was her fate to marry him, and therefore desired that they would give themselves no farther pain on that occasion.

As she was naturally of a haughty obstinate disposition, it is highly probable that the remonstrances they took the liberty of making to her, rather strengthened than abated her resolution of giving herself to him :—I was at her house one day, under cover of my Invisible Belt, when I heard the following conversation between them :

Orfanes. ‘ Condemn me not, my angel, for
‘ being sometimes melancholy even in your divine
‘ presence ;—though you have promised to make
‘ me one day the happiest of mankind, and I look
‘ upon

‘ upon every word of that dear mouth as unfailling as an Oracle, yet when I consider the length of time between me and the consummation of my wishes, the impatience of my passion will not permit me to be gay.’

Lysetta. ‘ You men are always in such a hurry in every thing you do.’

Orfames. ‘ Ah, madam, ’tis a dreadful thing to have one’s happiness depend on the uncertain winds and waves, it may be yet two months before my effects can arrive from Philadelphia.’

Lysetta. ‘ And do you call that so long a time?’

Orfames. ‘ A million of ages in the account of love; and even, according to common calculation, longer than human nature can sustain continual torments;—eight whole weeks, six and fifty anxious days, and as many restless nights; upwards of thirteen hundred hours of tedious expectation; and minutes almost numberless, wasted in pain which might be passed in pleasure, if you would shorten the tremendous date.’

Lysetta. ‘ What would you have me do?’

Orfames. ‘ Ah! if you loved, you would not need to be told; but of yourself generously bring the blessed event nearer to my wishes.’

Lysetta. ‘ You would not have me marry you till your affairs are settled, and things can be done regularly for our mutual satisfaction.’

Orfames. ‘ I understand you, madam;—the articles of jointure and pin-money, I know, are customary in modish marriages; but the passion you have inspired me with is of too sublime a nature to stoop to such mean forms.—I ask not what your fortune is, but will settle the whole of mine upon you;—your lovely person is all the treasure I am ambitious of preserving;—the rest shall be at your disposal.’

Lysetta.

Lysetta. ‘ That is kind, indeed ; but more than I desire or would accept of.’

Orfames. ‘ Oh ! that you had no other fortune than your beauty ;—then would the sincerity of my love be proved by endowing you with all that Heaven has made me master of.—Alas ! you know not how ardently,—how faithfully I adore you.’

Lysetta. ‘ Yes, I am vain enough to think I have some share in your affection.’

Orfames. ‘ Some share !—oh ! could you be sensible of the thousandth part of what I feel, pity, if not love, would compel you to ease my throbbing heart of the suspense it labours under, and you would give yourself to my despairing—dying—burning—bleeding passion.’

Lysetta. ‘ I have already said I will be yours, and now again repeat it.’

Orfames. ‘ But when, my Angel ?’

In speaking these words he threw himself upon his knees before her,—burst into a flood of well dissembled tears, and grasp’d her Robe de Chambre with agonies which I cannot but say had much the appearance of reality, while in these terms he prosecuted his design :

Orfames. ‘ I have till now supported life but in the rapturous hope of being one day bless’d in your possession : but even hope, by its uncertainty, becomes at last too weak an aid ; and soon, very soon, my adorable Lysetta, will you behold your faithful lover a cold breathless corps, unless the balm of your kindness recruits the vital lamp, and gives fresh vigour to my depress’d and breaking heart.’

Lysetta. ‘ I cannot bear to hear and see you thus ;—rise, sir,—this posture does not become the man whom I intend to make my husband.’

Orfames. ‘ No, by Heaven, I will never quit

VOL. II.

C

‘ your

‘ your feet without an assurance of my happiness,
‘ Say then,—oh ! say ! when shall be the blissful
day that makes you mine ?’

Lysetta. ‘ Since it must be so,—even when
you please.—No, hold,—I had forgot myself.’

Orfames. ‘ Oh, Heavens, what now !’

Lysetta. ‘ I promised a reverend clergyman,
my near kinsman, that if ever I married, he
should perform the ceremony ;—he is at present
out of town, but will return next Sunday, and
on the Tuesday following it shall not be my fault
if we do not attend him at the Altar.’

Orfames. ‘ Extatic sound !—may I depend on
the performance of this Heavenly promise !’

Lysetta. ‘ You may, and be entirely easy on
that point ; take now my hand, as an earnest of
my giving it to you in a more solemn manner
before a parson :—henceforward I shall look up
on myself as yours.’

Orfames. ‘ Angel !—Coddef !—thus then let
me seal the covenant on those charming lips that
has pronounced it.’

Lysetta. ‘ The covenant will not hold good in
law without both parties interchangeably sign
their assent.’

She uttered these words with a most pleasing
smile, and at the same time threw her arms about
his neck, and returned the passionate salute she had
received from him, adding this tender expression :

Lysetta. ‘ My dear, dear Orfames, I do not
now blush to confess to you, that from the first
moment you declared yourself my lover, my
heart corresponded with your vows, and told me
what would be the event.’

He affected too much transport, on hearing her
speak in this manner, to be able to make any other
reply than kisses and embraces, which, as she was
far from repelling, or seeming the least offended at,

I know not what advantages he might have taken, on finding her thus soften'd by his artifices, if a sudden interruption had not, happily for her, broke off this dangerous entertainment.

A footman came in, and told her that her aunt, lady Gravelove, was come to visit her; on which she cry'd with some peevishness,

Lysetta. ‘ Pish,—Why did you not say I was from home?’

Footman. ‘ Your ladyship gave me no such orders; but if you please, I will go and tell her that I was mistaken, and that your ladyship went out without my knowing you had done so.’

Lysetta. ‘ No, no, I must see her;—go and say I will wait on her presently.’

Then turning fondly to Orfames, said,

Lysetta. ‘ Do you chuse to join company with my aunt; or shall I fetch some book to amuse you with till she is gone?’

Orfames. ‘ No, my dearest love;—this lady has always look'd upon me with an unpleasing eye, especially of late, therefore will not offend her with my presence;—neither are my spirits enough composed, in the excess of joy you have inspired me with, to read any thing with attention;—so will take a little walk.’

Lysetta. ‘ Do so;—but I shall expect you back to supper,—my aunt seldom stays longer than to drink tea, and I am sure I shall not press her at this time.’

No more was said on either side;—they embrac'd and parted,—she went into the next room, and he down stairs, in order to go where his business or inclination called him.

As I never believed this fellow was what he pretended, I had taken some pains to discover the truth of his circumstances; but without any success, till it now came into my mind to follow him

after he had left Lysetta's house ; which I did, resolving not to lose sight of him till he should return to her again.

He went directly to Drury-lane, walk'd very fast, and never stopp'd till he came to the entrance of a narrow passage between that place and Wild-street, where he stood still, and look'd round him, as I suppose, to see if any one was near who might know him ; for day was not yet quite shut in ; -- then pass'd a little farther, -- look'd about him again, and finding the coast, as he thought, clear, none being in the alley but his Invisible attendant, slipp'd hastily into a little dirty ale-house, where an old woman met him, and told him his friends were all above, on which he ran up stairs and push'd open the door of a room, pretty spacious, indeed, but had otherwise all the signs of beggary and wretchedness about it.

Here we found five or six men, tolerably well habited ; but had something in their countenances which made me guess their occupation before they discover'd it by their conversation ; for they were no better than a gang of thieves and sharpers, -- they were sitting round a table, with a great bowl of punch before them, when Orfames rush'd in, and with a gay air accosted them in these terms :

Orfames. ' Wish me joy, my lads, --- my hearts of steel, -- wish me joy ; -- I have gain'd my point ; -- all is over, i'faith.'

First Man. ' What, married !'

Orfames. ' No, but as good as married ; -- the wench and her twelve thousand pounds are as sure to me, as if I had the one in my arms and the other in my pocket ; -- Tuesday is the day, my buff's.'

As he spoke this he drumm'd with his hands upon the table, and roar'd with a shrill voice this scrap of an old ballad :

Orfames.

Orfames. ‘ On Tuesday morning ’twill be all
‘ my care,
‘ To powder my locks and to comb up my hair :
‘ Hey, so trim and so snug upon Tuesday.
‘ But I must have more money ; by G——d, I have
‘ not a single doit left.’

Second Man. ‘ How !—All the fifty pieces gone
‘ already ?’

Orfames. ‘ Ay, faith, and well laid out too ;
‘ —I shall return it with interest ;—you shall all
‘ share in the money, and the woman too.—But
‘ come,—how stands stock among you ?’

Third Man. ‘ Cursed low :—ho’ we have been
‘ all out to day we have not collected above thirty
‘ pieces, and four gold watches that must be knock’d
‘ to pieces, and the cases melted down, or the
‘ makers names may betray us.’

Fourth Man. ‘ The road grows worse and worse
‘ every day, I think ;—people are either poorer or
‘ more cautious than ever they were.’

Orfames. ‘ But did you get nothing from the
‘ four ladies that the Fortune-teller told you were
‘ to take the air this morning on Barnes-Com-
‘ mon ?’

Fifth Man. ‘ I should have done ; but as the
‘ devil would have it, just as they were going to
‘ pull out their purses, three gentlemen, with fire-
‘ arms, came galloping towards us, and oblig’d me
‘ to make off without my booty.’

Orfames. ‘ ’Twas damn’d unlucky.’

First Man. ‘ One meets with a thousand such
‘ disappointments ;—for my part I am half sick of
‘ the busines, and so I believe we are all.’

Second Man. ‘ Ay, faith ; for what with seeing
‘ innkeepers, coachmen, fortune-tellers, and other
‘ such necessary informers, we have the least part
‘ of the profit to ourselvcs.’

Third Man. ‘ Ay,—I wish, Orsames, you were once married, that you might set up a gaming-table under the sanction of your lady’s name;—gaming is ten times more profitable, as well as a safer way of thieving.’

Orsames. ‘ You know it was my bargain, and you may depend upon my honour that it shall be the first thing I will do.’

Fourth Man. ‘ It will be a joyful day; for since taxes have been so high, and trade so low, such numbers of shop-keepers are obliged to take the road, that we old practitioners can scarce get a living by it.’

Orsames. ‘ Well, well, all this will be over in a short time;—but you must raise me some cash;—I can easily give you an account of the fifty pieces.’

Fifth Man. ‘ No, no, it needs not;—we know you would not sink upon us.’

Orsames. ‘ I chuse, however, to do it:—the first article is five guineas to the Fortune-teller, as an earnest of the hundred she is to receive after my marriage with Lysetta:—the second is twenty pounds for a gold snuff box, which I pretended to have brought from Philadelphia and presented to her ladyship:—the third is about ten more, spent in three several jaunts I made with her to Richmond, Windsor, and Greenwich:—the remainder, you may believe, might well be spent in donations to her servants, board-wages to my own man,—paying my lodgings at two guineas a week, chair hire, and other such necessary expences.’

First Man. ‘ You could do no less.’

Second Man. ‘ Ay, ay,—nothing of all this could have been spared.—But what sum do you demand at present?’

Orsames. ‘ I believe twenty pieces will defray the

the whole charges of the wedding, which is all I want ;—after them, my boys, I shall have enough for you all.'

On this every one turn'd out his pockets, and the sum requested was immediately made up and laid upon the table, which *Orfames* put into his purse ; and then some discourse ensued among this vicious company which I chuse to pass over in silence, as it would be no fit entertainment for the chaste ears of my fair readers.

Orfames staid with them about two hours, and then took his leave in order to sup with *Lysetta*, as she had desir'd he would ;—I accompanied him not thither, but went home to my own apartment, more full of confusion at the discovery I had made than I am able to express.

Tho' I half despised *Lysetta* for the follies I had seen her guilty of, yet when I reflected on her birth, and the character she had hitherto maintain'd in the world, I could not bear the thoughts of her becoming the victim of the base design concerted against her ; and her fortune, reputation, and eternal peace of mind, the prey of such a nest of villains.

My whole study was now fully bent how to snatch this unfortunate lady from that gulph of perdition she was upon the brink of, and so near plunging into.

I was extremely divided in my thoughts what to do on this occasion ; to give her any hints concerning the dangers to which she exposed herself and reputation, by encouraging the addressess of a man whose character she was so little acquainted with, I knew would be in vain, as she had rejected all the warnings given her on that score, and refused to listen to the admonitions of her best friends and nearest kindred.—I had it in my power, indeed, to inform her of much more than any of them could even guess at ; but then I could not relate the scene

I had been witness of without discovering at the same time the secret of my Invisible Belt, which was by no means proper for me to entrust her with.

To acquaint her by letter with what I knew concerning Orfames, and the villainous conspiracy had been form'd to ruin her, I fear'd would be to as little purpose; and doubted not but she would look upon an anonymous intimation only as a piece of malice, and treat it with the contempt it might seem to merit;—as this, however, was the only method which I could take to save her, with any convenience to myself, I resolved to pursue it; and accordingly wrote to her the next morning a full account of all I had been witness of between Orfames and his wicked companions.

I made this letter be left at her house before the time in which she usually got out of bed, to the end she might have leisure to consider the contents, without being interrupted by any company coming in;—as I was desirous of seeing in what manner she would receive this intelligence, I went, under cover of my Belt, and gained entrance just as she had finish'd the perusal.

Her behaviour was such as I had apprehended it would be;—she tore the letter,—storm'd, and cry'd out,

Lysetta. ‘ Was there ever so much impudence ! —Sure the person that sent this infamous scrawl must have a very mean opinion of my understanding to think I could give the least credit to such a vile aspersion.—Orfames an impostor ! a companion for thieves and vagabonds ! —ridiculous.’

And then again :

Lysetta. ‘ This must certainly be a contrivance of some of my wise kindred to break off the match:—I could find in my heart to send for Orfames and marry him this instant, to shew how

‘ much

‘ much I despise their little malice :—but ‘tis no
‘ matter,—Tuesday will soon arrive, and that will
‘ put an end to all.’

I staid a full hour, in the supposition that Orfames would make her a morning’s visit ; but finding, by some discourse she had with her maid, that she did not expect him, and was making herself ready to go among the shops for things she wanted to buy, I quitted her apartment much disconcerted at the ill success of what I had done.

However, as I had little else to employ my time that day, I went again in the afternoon, Orfames was now there, and two ladies of Lysetta’s particular acquaintance :—whether she had mention’d any thing to him of the letter I cannot be certain ; but am apt to think she had not ; for he appear’d with an alertness, which, by all I could discover, had nothing of constraint in it.

Cards were call’d for, and they were just going to sit down to Whist, when word was brought Lysetta that her cousin, Capt. Platoon, was just arriv’d from Carlisle and come to wait upon her, on which she order’d him to be shew’d up immediately.

Orfames, who I perceived had turn’d pale as ashes on hearing this gentleman’s name, now rose hastily from his chair, and said to Lysetta,

Orfames. ‘ I have just thought of some busines
‘ I had to dispatch ;—your ladyship must excuse
‘ me.’

Lysetta. ‘ You will not go ?’

Orfames. ‘ The affair that calls me is of conse-
‘ quence ;—I cannot stay.’

She was going to make some reply, but the Captain came that instant into the room ;—while he was paying his compliments to his cousin and the other ladies, Orfames had taken up his hat and was endeavouring to slip out unperceived ; but Othe

quick-sightedness of Lysetta prevented him;—she ran to him, and catching hold of his sleeve, spoke thus:

Lysetta. ‘ You shall not go, at least till I have presented you to my cousin.’

Then turning to the Captain said,

Lysetta. ‘ This is a gentleman, cousin, whose acquaintance, I believe, you will hereafter think yourself happy in.’

On this the Captain advanced with great politeness to embrace the person his fair kinswoman presented to him; but had no sooner fix'd his eyes upon his face, than he started back with the utmost astonishment, and cry'd out to Lysetta:

Capt. Platoon. ‘ What is the meaning of this, madam?—Who would you introduce to me?’

She was opening her mouth to make some answer; but Orfames, who was drawing as fast as he could towards the door, hinder'd her from speaking, by saying with a hesitating voice:

Orfames. ‘ Madam,—the gentleman does not seem to desire any new acquaintance;—I will wait on your ladyship another time.’

In speaking this he got to the top of the stair-case, and 'tis likely would have made but one step to the bottom, if the Captain had not prevented him, by running to him and catching fast hold of him by the collar, dragg'd him back, saying at the same time;

Capt. Platoon. ‘ No, rascal, you must not think to leave this place till you have confess'd what devil gave you the impudence to introduce yourself into such company,—and on what villainous design you are thus disguised in the habit of a gentleman.’

Orfames. ‘ Sir, I don't understand this usage;—you neither know me nor did I ever see you before;—you must mistake me for some other.’

Capt.

Capt. Platoon. ‘Dog,—do you think I am to be deceived by the dress I see you in?’

Then addressing himself to Lysetta, who stood as motionless as if transfix’d with thunder, went on thus :

Capt. Platoon. ‘Madam, by what means soever this villain has imposed upon you, I do assure you, upon my honour, that two months ago he was a private man in Capt. Cutcomb’s company, and drum’d out of the regiment for pig-stealing, and other misdemeanors; for some of which, indeed, he ought to have been hang’d.’

On these words Lysetta scream’d out,—‘Oh! Heavens!—and fell into a swoon;—the Captain seeing this, quitted his prisoner to run with the two ladies to her assistance; and Orfames took this opportunity of making his escape.

Proper means being apply’d, she soon recovered, and the swelling passions which had occasioned this disorder vented themselves in tears;—the Captain appear’d a little impatient to know how she became acquainted with such a wretch as Orfames; but she told him she was not then in a condition to inform him of the particulars,—said, she was very ill and must lie down, and desired to see him another time;—on which he took his leave, as did the two ladies, who knowing Orfames had profess’d himself her lover, and the encouragement she had given him, I could perceive smiled within themselves at the discovery.

Thus was Lysetta preserved from ruin, and had no other punishment for her folly than being laugh’d at by those who were privy to the affair:—as for Orfames, I have since met him about town in a very shabby and tatter’d condition;—the gang of villains, his associates, I believe are dispersed, and one of them has made his exit at Tyburn.

C H A P. V.

Treats on various matters, some of which, the author dares venture to assure the public, will hereafter be found not only more entertaining, but also of more consequence than at present they appear to be.

I HAD been told that lady Playfeild's rout was an assemblage of the most brilliant and polite persons of both sexes, and tho' I never had any great opinion of these sort of meetings, yet I was tempted to go thither, in order to be myself a witness how far the description that had been given me was consonant to truth.—As I am an entire stranger to her ladyship, and did not care for the formality of being introduced by any one who went there, I chose to make this visit in my Invisible Capacity.

The great number of wax-tapers, the sparkle of the ladies jewels, and the extraordinary beauty of some among them, was dazzling to my eyes at first entrance; but I soon found that I had the same fault to find with this as I had done in all other mix'd company I ever saw; — a kind of hurry and confusion, which destroys that solid conversation that is so agreeable when only a few select friends are met together.

It was very near nine o'clock when I went thither, yet there were several who came in after me; — lady Playfeild receiv'd all of them with her accustom'd politeness; but for a great while there was nothing in the salutations on either side which engross'd my attention so far as to make me spread my Tablets to retain it.

I was indeed, quite indolent to every thing that was said, till the entrance of lady Allmode gave a little spur to my curiofity; — I had heard much talk of this lady, not only for her being extravagantly fond

fond of every new fashion, but also for a certain peculiarity in her manner of conversation, which made her admired by people of a low education, and as much laugh'd at by those of a superior.

I had been told that she had an utter aversion to plain English ;—and so thorough a contempt for what she called the vulgar way of speaking, that when she talk'd, even on the most common things, she interlarded all she said with the hardest words she could pick out of the dictionary, and frequently coined new ones of her own, which never were nor scarce ever will be found in any Vocabulary.

Lady Playfeild, I perceived, received her with a great deal of respect ; — I was then at some distance, but on finding they were entering into conversation, drew more near, to have an opportunity of hearing and improving myself, by a person of whom so extraordinary a description had been given me.

After the first compliments were over, lady Playfeild addressed herself to her in these terms :

Lady Playfeild. ‘ Tho’ I am always happy when
‘ I see your ladyship, yet now I can scarce for-
‘ bear complaining of your unkindness in coming
‘ without Miss Arabella ; — I hear she has been in
‘ town above a week.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ I could not have been guilty
‘ of so enormous a solecism in good breeding, as
‘ not to have brought her to pay her duty to your
‘ ladyship, if there had been a possibility in nature
‘ to have done it.’

Lady Playfeild. ‘ I hope Miss is well, madam.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Perfectly, so, madam, as to
‘ her health ; but such a sight,—such a figure ; — a
‘ greater metamorphosis than any in Ovid.’

Lady Playfeild. ‘ What does your ladyship mean ?’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Oh, madam, the remotest
‘ corners of the most desert of the three Arabias
‘ never

never produced such a creature, — such a *Tramontane*, as the Italians elegantly phrase it. — Well, — these people, who live a great way from London, are such absurdians, — such awkwardies. — Would your ladyship believe it, — they sent the girl home in a cap that quite covered the drum of her ears?

Lady Playfeild. ‘ That might be to prevent her from catching cold in the stage-coach.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Oh, Jupiter! — how am I surpriz’d to hear your ladyship talk in this manner! — as if any one could catch cold with what is the fashion. — But this is not all, — the girl had several new suits of cloaths when she left London, made in the gentelest taste; but any country aunt took it into her head, that either I had allow’d too scanty a pattern, or that she had outgrown them, out of mere goodwill and simplicity, has lengthen’d all her petticoats to such a ridiculous size, that they almost come down to the buckles of her shoes; — I protest one can scarce see whether she has any ankles, much less if she has any calves to her legs.’

On this a gentleman who stood pretty near approach’d lady Allmode, and with a tone the most ironical that could be, replied to what she had said in these words:

Gentleman. ‘ Your ladyship must excuse the mistake your aunt has made; for I fancy the fashion of going half naked may not yet have reached so far as Wales.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ You certainly speak the rational of the thing, sir; — few of these mountaineers regard any thing but loading their tables with provisions, feasting their tenants, paying their debts, standing up for the liberties of their country, and such-like antiquated obsolete customs; — for my part all my faculties are immured in a profundity

‘ profundity of astonishment, to think that my aunt could marry and settle among such aliens to politeries, — such heathens to the laws of good breeding and the Drawing-Room.’

Gentleman. ‘ Perhaps, madam, the customs and manners you mention were in vogue at the time of your aunt’s marriage?’

Lady Almoe. ‘ I protest, sir, you have hit upon the solution of this enigma; — it was, indeed, in the reign of Queen Anne that she married.’

I had seen enough of this fine lady, and did not chuse to have my Tablets crowded with any more of her unintelligible jargon, so retired to another part of the room, where I saw three ladies got together, and seemed very earnest in discourse.

But little was I like to be the better for my near approach, for being on the topic of scandal, each was so full, and so highly delighted with the thoughts of it, that all speaking at the same time prevented me from hearing distinctly what was said by any of them; and all I could gather at last was, that a certain lady of their acquaintance had been caught with her footman; and that her husband contented himself with securing his future honour by an Italian safe-guard.

As I had been informed of the particulars of this story before, the foible of the transgressing fair did not so much engross my meditations as the pleasure those of her own sex seemed to take in exposing it, and I could not help saying to myself with the Poet:

‘ There is a lust in man no charm can tame,
‘ Of loudly publishing his neighbour’s shame.
‘ On Eagles wings immortal scandals fly,
‘ While virtuous actions are but born, and die.’

But this was a place more proper to collect matter for reflection hereafter, than to indulge it at present;

present; so I pass'd on among the gaming-tables, which were eleven in number, and none of them unoccupy'd.

Here it was pleasant enough to observe the various attitudes of those that play'd; and I think there is not a more sure way of judging people's dispositions than to see them at this diversion; — some of those who swept the stakes received the favours fortune bestowed on them with an ease and calmness, which shewed that they had not been over anxious whether she smiled or frowned; but there were many more, who snatch'd up the glittering metal with a greediness which sufficiently demonstrated that avarice was the chief excitement to what they did.

As for the losers, it gave me an infinite satisfaction to see the unconcerned behaviour of some few among them; — while others again filled me with a no less sensible disquiet at their impatience: — I was ashamed to find a gentleman of rank and fortune forget all politeness, and sometimes even common decency, to those who had his money in their pockets; and sorry in my heart to see a lady bite her lips, wrinkle her forehead with unbecoming frowns, distort every feature, and disfigure all the charms that nature had bestow'd on her, for the loss of what was not worth half that anxiety to preserve. — ‘Good Heaven! said I to myself, if this be the effects of gaming, what madness is it to venture one's peace in that uncertain gulph?’

I remember a saying of old Massenger's, which may be applicable enough on this occasion:

‘ The wife will never put in fortune's power,
‘ That which they cannot lose without repining.’

The beautiful Ismena was this night among the number of the unfortunates, but not of the impatients, — I stood behind her chair, and saw her empty a well fill'd purse, and take out of it even

the

the last
young
large
thrown
Clarino
and ha
Fairlow
engage
but see
the tab
Clar
‘ more
‘ not
Ism
‘ be a
‘ what
‘ my
‘ abou
Sir
‘ wife
‘ the
Clar
‘ think
‘ — a
‘ say
She
a purp
ted th
Clar
‘ no l
Sir
‘ dam
‘ a tri
‘ char
‘ ple
Clar
Ism

the last guinea with a smile ; — she was, indeed, a young lady lately come to the possession of a very large fortune, and could not want what she had thrown away ; but the same might also be said of Clarinda, who play'd at the same table with her, and had also lost a considerable sum to sir Charles Fairlove, with whom these two ladies had been engaged this whole evening at a Poole at Picquet : — but see the difference, the latter of them rose from the table in a fury, — tore her fan, and cry'd,

Clarinda. ‘ Curse the cards, — I will play no more this night, — that I am resolved ; — at least not with sir Charles.’

Ismena. ‘ Nay, madam, we have no reason to be angry with sir Charles, for having done by us what we would gladly have done by him ; — for my part, tho' he has stripp'd me of all I had about me, I am as good friends with him as ever.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ I hope so, madam, otherwise the good-luck I have had at play would prove the greatest misfortune of my life.’

Clarinda. ‘ The devil’s in the cards to-night, I think ; — I never lost at Picquet in my life before, — and now I have thrown away, I cannot justly say how much, — but I’ll see.’

She then turned to the table, and pour’d out of a purse what was remaining in it, and having counted the sum went on in the same heat as before.

Clarinda. ‘ Yes, — by Heaven I thought so ! — no less than six and twenty pieces.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ I should be sorry, madam, to give you any disquiet on the score of such a trifle ; but I can do no more than offer you a chance for regaining all you have lost ; — if you please, I will stake the whole against five of yours.’

Clarinda. ‘ I should lose that too, I suppose.’

Ismena. ‘ Venture it, however ; — if you lose it

‘ I’ll

‘ I’ll be your halves, and send you the money to-morrow morning.’

Clarinda. ‘ Well then I will make one more essay.’

With these words she sat down again; — they play’d; she was the winner, and now appear’d as gay and happy as she had lately been discontented; — sir Charles smiled with some disdain at this reverse in her humour, and turning to Ismena, said,

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Now, madam, you must take up the winner.’

Ismena. ‘ She must give me credit then, sir; you both know I have no stake to lay down.’

Clarinda. ‘ You must excuse me for that, madam,—it may turn my luck;—besides, one has no heart to play when one does not see the money on the table.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Well then, beautiful Ismena,—I will give you credit;—or if you please, will play upon the square, — my honour against yours.’

Ismena. ‘ With all my heart, sir Charles.’

The ill-nature, the ill-manners, and, indeed, the ingratitude of Clarinda, in refusing to give the credit of a stake at cards, to a friend who had just before offer’d to pay half the losses she should sustain in playing with another, made that young lady as disagreeable in my eyes, as the sweetnes of disposition and generosity of the sprightly Ismena made her charming to a much greater degree than ever she had appear’d to me before,—all lovely, as it must be confess’d she is;—but to proceed:

Ismena having accepted the challenge of sir Charles, she cut the cards, and tried once more what chance would do for her; — chance was fit against her, and sir Charles again the conqueror.— The game being over, she said laughing:

Ismena.

Ismena. ‘ Well, — I may now sing Fortune is my foe, — and content myself, for the remainder of this night, with being an humble spectator of other people’s diversion, since I am not in a condition to partake of it myself.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ It will be your own fault then, madam, if you are; — I believe I have an hundred and some odd pieces about me, which are all at your devotion.’

Ismena. ‘ I thank you, sir Charles; but I do not chuse to risque so much as that at one sitting: — I do not care, however, if I become your debtor for twenty pieces.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ You do me a pleasure, madam, in accepting any part of the offer I made you: — there is the trifle you mention, if you want more I beg you will command it.’

Ismena. ‘ No, sir, I am determin’d to play no farther than this, — I am much oblig’d to you for the favour, and will return it to-morrow morning.’

She then took up the twenty guineas sir Charles had laid down and put them into her purse; but while she was doing so, he reply’d to her last words in this manner:

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ There is no occasion, madam, for you to give yourself the trouble of sending this trifle to me — I have business that will bring me into your neighbourhood to-morrow morning, and if you are so good to permit me that honour, will wait on you about twelve.’

Ismena. ‘ You may depend, sir, on my being at home.’

Clarinda, who had not open’d her mouth all this time, no sooner saw her fair friend receive the money than she laid her hand on hers, and with a gay air said to her:

Clarinda. ‘ Now, my dear, I am ready for you,

‘ you, if you please, and willing to venture as much with you as you have borrow’d of sir Charles.’

To this Ismena reply’d, with more seriousness than she was wont to put on :

Ismena. ‘ No, madam,—I have been very unlucky here, and am resolved to change hands ; —I see lady Longmore has given out at the Whist table yonder,—I’ll go and take her place.’

With these words she rose hastily from her seat and did as she had said, without waiting to hear any thing that might be offer’d to detain her by either of those she had been playing with.—Sir Charles Fairlove follow’d her to the other table, and stood behind her chair till he saw her win more than the sum he had lent her.

On the company’s breaking up she look’d round the room for sir Charles, in order, as I suppose, to return the money to him ; but if she had any such design he had taken care to prevent the execution of it, by leaving the place some little time before she had done playing.

This action of sir Charles, join’d to some amorous glances I had perceived him to regard her with, made me suspect he had some farther view than mere complaisance in what he had done ; but as he was generally accounted a man of honour, and she had an unblemish’d character, I suspended my judgment ’till I should see the event of the visit she had promised to receive from him the next morning.

After I had quitted this scene of gay confusion, as Mr. Addison elegantly expresses it, and had time to ruminate on the transactions that evening had presented me with, sir Charles Fairlove and Ismena ran very much in my head, but did not ^{so} totally engross my attention as to make me negligent of all others :—I had heard several of the assembly say to each other that Miss Allmode was a most beautiful

young

young creature, and would certainly be the reigning toast of the town if not spoil'd by the affection of her mother ; and this distinct description gave me a curiosity both to see the girl, and in what manner her self-sufficient ladyship behaved towards her.

Accordingly I laid down a plan for my progression the next morning, which was this : --- to go to lady Allmode's as early as it was reasonable to suppose she and her daughter would be stirring, and from thence pass on to the apartment of Ismena at the time Sir Charles Fairlove had appointed to be there ; and then, having fully settled this point in my mind, began to remember that the night was very far advanced, and went to bed, as it is probable some of my readers may find it necessary to do at this time.

C H A P. VI.

Contains such things as are not often to be met with, neither in the one nor the other sex ; yet are, or at least ought to be, equally interesting to both.

I ROSE the next morning more early than I had been for the most part accustomed to do, in order to prepare for the two visits I intended to make ; but in spite of all the expedition I could practice, I found myself obliged to postpone either the one or other till another day.

So much time was elapsed, first in transcribing what I had been witness of at lady Playfeild's, and then in getting the dialogues engrav'd on my tablets expunged by the pure fingers of my yet un-polluted virgin, that when all was ready the clock wanted but a very few minutes of striking twelve.

I hesitated not whether I should go to lady Allmode's or to Ismena ; for besides being very much prepossess'd in favour of the latter, I did not doubt

of

of meeting with something of more consequence in her interview with Sir Charles Fairlove than I could expect to find in any discourse between lady Allmode and her daughter ; — I went thither in a lucky time, — Sir Charles Fairlove was just stepping out of his chair when I came to the door, — I followed him up stairs, and Ifmena received him with a great deal of gaiety, but accompanied with an equal air of modesty ; ... as soon as they were seated, she said to him :

Ifmena. ‘ Your money was very fortunate to me, Sir Charles, I did not lose one guinea after I became your borrower.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Madam, I congratulate myself for being so happy to serve you, tho’ on so insignificant an occasion ; — but should be better pleased to have it in my power to do so in much greater things.’

Ifmena. ‘ I doubt not of your generosity to persons in distress, and if ever I am reduced to the same exigence again, it is likely may have recourse to the same hand for relief ; — in the mean time, Sir Charles, permit me to return the favour you have already conferr’d upon me.’

In speaking this she drew out her purse and counted twenty guineas on the table, which Sir Charles took up and put into his pocket with a very careless air ; — saying at the same time :

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ This trifle, madam, is neither worth your returning nor my receiving, nor should I have ever thought on it, if I had not given you credit on an infinitely more valuable account.’

Ifmena. ‘ Credit ! — As how, Sir Charles ?’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Yes, madam, — a debt which I am too impatient to wait long for the payment of, and am now come to claim.’

Ifmena.

Ismena. ' You rally well, Sir Charles ; — but
as I cannot comprehend the purport, am not
prepared to give an answer.'

Sir Charles Fairlove. ' No, i'faith, madam, you
will find me extremely serious ; --- but surely
you cannot be so strangely forgetful as not to re-
collect what you lost to me last night at play ? '

Ismena. ' I lost nothing but what I paid, Sir
Charles.'

Sir Charles Fairlove. ' Nothing, madam ? '

Ismena. ' No, upon my honour.'

Sir Charles Fairlove. ' You have named the ve-
ry thing,---your honour, madam ; --- when a lady
ventures her honour at a gaming-table, and is so
unlucky as to lose, she must expect to pay the
forfeit.'

Ismena. ' What do you mean, Sir Charles ? '

Sir Charles Fairlove. ' My meaning needs no
explanation, madam ; --- you lost your honour
to me, and I now demand the immediate pos-
session of what I fairly won, and which if you
refuse to yield I have a right to seize.'

Ismena. ' Ridiculous.'

Sir Charles Fairlove. ' Madam, the contempt
you treat my pretensions with take not away the
validity of them ; --- what was once your honour
is now no longer so, but mine, and at my dis-
posal ; --- and you would not, sure, go about
to defraud me of the good that fortune has
bestowed upon me ? '

With these words he threw his arms about her
waist, with a freedom which shew'd he indeed
look'd upon her as his own :—she seem'd a little
alarm'd at this action, and starting some paces
from him, endeavoured to repulse the temerity he
was guilty of, by saying to him :

Ismena. ' Forbear ;—this fooling is offensive.'

Sir Charles Fairlove. ' Madam, this coyness
is

‘ is trifling ; I am surprised you will oblige me to have recourse to force for what is so much my due, and I should set a higher value upon it chearfully resign’d.—Come, madam,—I think this way leads to your bed-chamber.’

He then catch’d hold of her a second time, and made an offer to bear her into another room ;—the grasp he had taken of her was not so strenuous, however, but that she easily disengag’d herself ; and having done so, cry’d out with a voice and air full of the extremest disdain.

Ismena. ‘ Till this action I scarce could think you were in earnest :—base, and presuming man, How dare you entertain thoughts so unworthy of me !’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ How dare you, madam, hazard on the chance of a game at cards what seems so precious to you ?’

Ismena. ‘ Oh, despicable !—to turn that into a matter of seriousness which you well know was only meant in jest.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ We men, madam, take all the advantages we can when we play with a fine woman ; and you may be assured I shall not easily be prevailed upon to relinquish those I have gain’d over you.’

Ismena. ‘ The vain idea will little avail your vile purpose.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ You may be mistaken, madam ;—the laws of Westminster hall, indeed, will scarcely take any cognizance of an affair of this nature ;—but those laws by which the polite world are chiefly govern’d, I mean the laws of gaming, will infallibly give it on my side ; that pride of your’s will be a good deal humbled when you see your stake of honour become the public jest, and all that has pass’d between us the subject of a news-paper.’

Ismena. ‘ I am confounded !—you cannot certainly be the monster you appear !’

Sir

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ I would not wish you, madam, to put me to the proof,’
Ismena. ‘ Oh, Heavens!—o what has one unguarded word exposed me! ’

She could not utter this exclamation without letting fall some tears, which I perceived had a great effect on sir Charles, by the change it occasioned in his countenance; — he affected, however, to take no notice of it, and resuming his former boldness went on :

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ You see, madam, how it is; — you are intirely in my power, and if I cannot have my agreement, I will have my revenge, or at least an equivalent for both.’

Ismena. ‘ What equivalent! say, — tell me at once! ’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ You must redeem your forfeit honour by a sum of money.’

Ismena. ‘ Name it then.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Let me consider, madam,—a woman’s honour, as times now are, and beauty renders itself so cheap, will bear but a low price at the market; but as you are well-born,—well accomplish’d—are extremely handsome, and have more perfections, both of mind and body, than most of your sex can boast of,— I think five hundred pounds is the least I can demand.’

Ismena. ‘ You shall have it, sir.’

With this she ran hastily to a little cabinet that stood in the room, and having taken from thence what she wanted, turn’d again to the table saying,

Ismena. ‘ Those two Bank-bills, sir, contain the sum you mention,—take them, I beseech you, and ease me of your presence.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ I must first examine, madam, if they are genuine: — yes they are right; — and now, methinks, ’tis pity to rob yo:

‘ of so much money,—five hundred pounds will purchase five hundred pretty trinkets, and I cannot receive it without feeling some concern.’

Ismena. ‘ Oh, sir Charles, you need be under no concern on that score;—were it five times the sum, nay my whole fortune, I would gladly give it to be rid for ever both of you and your impudent demand.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Yet, in spite of all this severity, I shall willingly restore these bills on one condition.’

Ismena. ‘ Sir, I shall make no conditions with you;—therefore be gone and leave me.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Not till you have heard me, madam;—the condition I would stipulate is only this,—that you will make a solemn promise never to play again, except for mere diversion, with some select friends who you are certain will take no ungenerous advantage of you.’

Ismena. ‘ There is little occasion for me to bind myself by a promise to avoid a thing which I have already proved so mischievous;—the insults I have received from you will make me henceforth detest the sight of cards, and fly the society of all who pursue that dangerous amusement.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ It is enough;—my ends are fully answered; and thus, on my knees let me restore your bills, and with them a heart which long has been devoted to you, and never harbour’d a wish to your dishonour.’

Never had I known greater anxiety for any thing not relating to myself, or my particular friends, than I did for the issue of this conversation;—I had been extremely scandalized at some part of sir Charles’s behaviour; yet, by many indications, could not set him down in my mind for the mercenary villain he affected to be, and was now

now as much rejoiced to see a likelihood of not having been deceived in my conjectures in his favour, as the reader will presently be convinced.

Ismena, being too much amazed at this sudden turn to make an immediate reply, he went on thus, —still kneeling :

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Oh, Ismena ; forgive the seeming brutality I have been guilty of ; — I counterfeited the libertine, the villain, only to shew you there was a possibility for you to have met with such a one in reality ; and assum’d the most odious character, in order to render your’s more truly adorable : — the tender passion you inspir’d me with has made me keep a watchful eye over all your actions ; — I found you perfect in every thing except a too great readiness to follow the example of others in the destructive love of play ; — I know the dangers to which your sex are exposed by it, and that there were many snares spread for your innocence in particular ; by this means even last night some there were in company who wanted but the same opportunity I had to behave as I have done, tho’ with far different views. — Oh ! pardon, therefore, the only stratagem I could think of to clear your mind of a propensity which might in time have sullied all its brightness.’

Ismena. ‘ Rise, sir Charles ; — the diversity, I might say, indeed, the perplexity of my thoughts hinder’d me, ’till now, from observing the posture you were in ; — pray be seated, sir. — If I may give credit to your words, I am infinitely oblig’d to you for the care you took of my reputation, when you saw it so totally neglected by myself.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ No, madam, say not so ; — I dare believe you never have fail’d in a due regard for reputation, and am certain that the

‘ breath of slander has never presum’d to blast it ;
‘ and I could not mean to reproach you for any
‘ thing that has been, but to warn you against what
‘ might be ;—an immoderate inclination for gam-
‘ ing in your sex, I take to be the same as an im-
‘ moderate inclination to drinking is in ours, both
‘ are equally intoxicating and destructive to right
‘ reason ; they make the brain grow giddy, incap-
‘ pable of reflection, or any other pursuit than the
‘ darling folly, and they run headlong on, inve-
‘ lop’d in a mist of errors, where fortune, fame,
‘ and peace of mind are sometimes irrecoverably
‘ lost.’

Ismena. ‘ Oh, sir Charles, you have open’d
‘ my eyes to see that black abyss into which my
‘ inadvertency might one day have plunged me.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ I know very well, ma-
‘ dam, that you wanted only to be reminded of the
‘ danger to enable you to avoid it ;—the manner in
‘ which I have done so may have, perhaps, ap-
‘ pear’d too presuming ; but I fear’d more gentle
‘ methods might not have had the effect.’

Ismena. ‘ Make no apologies, sir Charles,—
‘ I am now convinced you meant me well, and I
‘ thank you for it.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ If you accept it as a
‘ proof of friendship, it may in time engage you to
‘ believe that a sincere and tender friendship in a
‘ person of my sex to one of yours deserves a softer
‘ name, and call it love.’

Ismena. ‘ We will not cavil about names, but
‘ must acknowledge, sir Charles, by what motive
‘ soever you have been actuated, the benefit is
‘ mine.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ How bless’d am I in
‘ this confession !—But, charming Ismena, may I
‘ not be permitted to wait on you sometimes, and
‘ have

‘ have leave to hope the services I shall hereafter
‘ pay you will not be rejected?’

Ismena. ‘ I flatter myself with being able to regulate my future conduct so as not to give you occasion to offer any of that frightful sort you have done this morning; and if I should relapse into my former errors, could neither expect nor deserve you should take the same trouble for my reformation; — therefore, I think, may safely venture to admit your visits.

She spoke these words with so obliging a smile, that sir Charles could not forbear testifying the transport he was in by imprinting several passionate kisses on one of her hands, after which, looking on her with an equal mixture of tenderness and respect, he said,

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Incomparable Ismena; how impossible is it for me to express either what you deserve, or what I feel in a full sensibility of your perfections?’

Ismena. ‘ I desire you will not go about to express either the one or the other; — the only merit I can boast of is in being so early convinced of my fault, and that I am so wholly owing to yourself; — for I confess to you, sir Charles, that though it is but lately I have begun to like play at all, yet by conversing with those who seem to have no other way of passing their time, it grew by very swift degrees more pleasing to me; and I believe that it would, in time, have become so habitual to me, that I should have expected the hour of sitting down to cards as naturally as that of sitting down to dinner; — but in the mirror you have presented to me, I now see that to indulge this amusement to an excess, is not only a folly below the dignity of a thinking mind, but also a kind of Scylla or Caribdes, formed by ourselves in the ocean of life, as if on

‘ purpose to wreck our fortunes, honour, reputation, and every thing that is dear.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Oh, madam! every word you speak on this occasion thrills me to the very soul;—I am charm’d,—I am ravish’d to find in a person of your sex and years such solid reason, —such an amazing quickness of apprehension.’

Ismena. ‘ You are relapsing into the panegyric strain; but I will hear no more of it:—you must give me leave to play the Monitor in my turn, —I have been your convert, and you must now be mine;—remember, sir Charles, that to listen to the tongue of flattery is no less pernicious than the folly you have taught me to be ashamed of.’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ I grant it is, madam; but the just praises of a real virtue cannot cause a blush either in the face of the giver or the receiver.

Ismena. ‘ Well, I find you will have the better of the argument, whether the tenet you take upon you to maintain be right or wrong;—therefore to put an end to it, what think you of a turn or two in the Mall this morning?’

Sir Charles Fairlove. ‘ Madam, I shall be happy to attend you any where.’

She then call’d for her capuchin, and little muff, which being immediately brought, sir Charles gave her his hand to lead her down stairs, and I retired to my apartment.

I had met with nothing a great while that gave me a more sensible satisfaction than to find a lady such as Ismena, in all the pride of blooming youth, beautiful, gay, and surrounded with a crowd of flatterers, bear with so much cheerfulness the conviction of her error, and testify so much gratitude to the person to whom she was indebted for her reformation.

The rough method he had taken for this purpose,

pose, was so far from raising any resentment in her, after once knowing the motive, that she look'd upon him as her best friend, esteem'd and loved him for it ;—conscious that it required no less than such a proceeding to rouse her from that thoughtlessness which alone had made her fall into an error, the danger of which she might otherwise have too late perceived.

I thought that I discovered something in these two accomplish'd persons, that seem'd to me as if Heaven had form'd and ordain'd them for each other, and I soon found that I had not been mistaken ;—they are now married with the highest approbation of all the friends and kindred on both sides ; and in the opinion of as many as have the pleasure of their acquaintance, bid fair to be one of the most happy pairs that ever enter'd into Hymen's bands.

C H A P. VII.

The Author has been in some debate within himself, whether he should insert or not, as he is conscious it will be little relish'd by the fashionable genteel part of his readers ;—and what is still worse, can afford neither much entertainment, nor much improvement to the others.

THE THERE is something very unaccountable in an over-curious disposition ;—it makes us eager, impatient, anxious, indefatigable, in prying into things which promise us not the least pleasure in the discovery of when known ;—a reader who has not this propensity in his nature, will doubtless think, by what I said of lady Allmode in the fifth Chapter of this Book, that I had already seen enough of her behaviour to keep me from being desirous of seeing more ; but this is judging according to the rules of right reason ; whereas a person who ne-

gleets his own affairs, to find out the secrets of others with whom he has no concern, cannot be supposed to have any.

But as every one is willing to find some excuse or other, even for the silliest things he can be guilty of; and according to the vulgar phrase, put pillows under his elbows; so I thought that in being a spectator of lady Allmode's conduct in her own family, and the manner in which she train'd up her daughter, something might present itself to me that would more than compensate for the time I should expend in going to her house.

How far the public may be of my opinion in this point must be left to the determination of hereafter; for the humour of the present age is so fluctuating and uncertain, that it is an utter impossibility to foresee either what will please or what offend,—as a poet of many centuries ago expresses himself on a parallel occasion:

—‘ Inconstant still and various,
 ‘ There's no to-morrow in us like to-day ;
 ‘ This hour we are cloudy, fullen and severe ;
 ‘ The next, with madding mirth disturb the air.’
 But all this is foreign to the purpose, and therefore impertinent;—it is enough to say that I went, without repeating the motive that induced me to it;—I shall therefore add no more, but proceed to the success of my visit.

I gain'd an easy access, the door happening to be open just as I reach'd it, to let out a footman in a gay livery, who had come to deliver some message; but was a good deal bewilder'd on my entrance, as I had never been in the house before, and was intirely unacquainted with the situation of any of the rooms;—I judged, however, that as it was morning, her ladyship would probably be above stairs;—on my coming to the top of the staircase I was as much at a loss as before;—I perceiv-

ed

ed there were several rooms, but the doors of them all were shut, and I durst not touch the lock of any one of them for fear I should be heard by those who might chance to be within.

The measure of time is always doubled when we wait for an event with impatience;—I remain'd not long, however, in this dilemma,—a servant came running hastily up the back stairs at the farther end of the gallery, with some drinking glasses on a silver waiter in his hand,—I follow'd him into a room where a woman, who by her appearance I guess'd was her ladyship's Abigail, received from him what he had brought, and carried it into an inner-chamber, the door of which she shut after her, but not so suddenly as to prevent my entering with her.

Here I found lady Allmode; but had she appear'd to me in any other place, should never have known her for the same I had seen at lady Playfeild's route,—so vast a difference is it in the power of art sometimes to make.

At the time of my coming in she was under the operation of having her eye-brows shaped with a small pair of pincers, by one of those persons who go by the name of Tyre-women; but, in my opinion, ought rather to be call'd face-menders, since their business is not so much to ornament the head as to rectify the defects of the features:—the important work being over, lady Allmode turn'd to a magnifier that stood upon her toylet, to see if all was right, and having look'd into it, cried out hastily:

Lady Allmode. ‘ Oh, mrs. Prim,—sure your eyes are in eclipse to day!—you have left no less than three exuberant hairs on my right brow, and I think arch'd it somewhat higher than the other.’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ I beg a thousand pardons of your ladyship, but I will presently remedy that error.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Do so.’

On this the artist employ'd her little instrument for a second essay,—after which lady Allmode look'd in the glass again and said,

Lady Allmode. ‘ It is very well now;—but I
‘ look wretchedly to day,—and it is no wonder;
‘ —What do you think, mrs. Prim,—that careleſs
‘ oaf there put me to bed last night without my
‘ Sperma-Ceti mask.’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ That was a great omission, indeed, madam;—but your ladyship must forgive it, mrs. Pinup does not use to neglect these things.’

Pinup. ‘ I am very sorry for it, mrs. Prim;—
‘ but it was so late when her ladyship went to
‘ bed;—and her ladyship was so sleepy.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ And your foolship was so sleepy
‘ too, I suppose.—But that is not all, mrs. Prim,
‘ —the creature threw it into some corner or other
‘ where Veni got at it, and this morning it was
‘ found half devour'd.’

Pinup. ‘ Your ladyship knows I have almost
‘ cried my eyes out about it,—and that I offer'd to
‘ bespeak another, and pay for it out of my own
‘ pocket.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Pay for it, ideot.—But tell me,
‘ creature, what atonement can't thou ever make
‘ for these depredations on my countenance?—
‘ Here I shall lose a whole day; for 'tis impossible
‘ I can think of appearing in public; and doſt
‘ thou consider, wench, that a day wasted in pri-
‘ vate is an age in the life of a woman of quality?’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ 'Tis very true, madam;—but I
‘ dare anſwer for mrs. Pinup, that ſhe will never
‘ be guilty of the like fault again; therefore I beg
‘ your ladyship will forgive her.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Yes, yes,—I have forgiven her,
‘ —and I do forgive her; but ſhe must expect to
‘ be told of it ſometimes:—if ſhe had lived with
‘ ſome

‘ ſome
‘ doors
‘ coeur
‘ Pinu
‘ Mrs.
‘ Pinu
‘ to pie
‘ ſweet
‘ Lady
‘ bout
‘ my r
‘ on y
‘ day.’
‘ Pinu
‘ Lady
‘ Dieu
‘ certi
‘ frame
‘ to ta
‘ Pinu
‘ your
‘ Lad
‘ best
‘ more
‘ hold,
‘ —N
‘ Prim
‘ Mr.
‘ of ev
‘ Lad
‘ as to
‘ you
‘ my
‘ mor
‘ Mr.
‘ no a
‘ ſever
‘ only

‘ some ladies they would have turned her out of doors that instant ;—*mais toujours les douceurs du cœur* lay an embargo on my indignation.’

Pinup. ‘ Your ladyship is all goodness.’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ There are few such ladies.’

‘ Pinup. ‘ No, indeed ;—and I could tear myself to pieces for having, thro’ negligence, offended so sweet a lady.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Well, well,—say no more about it ;—I am sorry I struck you in the heat of my resentment ;—but take the Dresden suit I had on yesterday, and let me see you in it on Sunday.’

Pinup. ‘ I humbly thank your ladyship.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Say no more of it.—Oh, *mon Dieu !* I begin to feel the effects of my disconcertion ;—every membrane throughout my whole frame has a pulsation in it ;—give me something to take this instant, or I shall faint.’

Pinup. ‘ I have it ready, madam.—I suppose your ladyship chuses brandy ?’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Aye ;—I think brandy is the best composition of the animal faculties :—a little more ;—still nearer to the top of the glass ;—hold, 'tis very well, I do not love it running over.—Now fill for mrs. Prim.—Pray drink, mrs. Prim,—'tis right Coniac, I assure you.’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ I know your ladyship has the best of every thing :—your ladyship’s good health.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ I thank you, mrs. Prim.—But as to the Sperma-Ceti mask, is it not possible for you to get one ready for me before I sleep,—else my face will be a perfect nutmeg-grater by to-morrow-morning ?’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ Oh, your ladyship need be under no apprehensions on that score,—I always keep several of these commodities prepar’d,—they want only sprinkling with a little Orange-flower water, ‘ to

‘ to take off the scent ; I will send your ladyship one this afternoon.—But is not your ladyship out of Pearl powder, you had but one ounce last week ?’

Lady Allmode. ‘ No, nor I do not think of having any more,—it leaves a certain roughness on the skin which is disagreeable ;—I will use nothing but Italian pots for the future ;—the paste incorporates itself, as it were, with the flesh, and gives a kind of fattening delicacy to it ;—let me have two pots.’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ Yes, madam.—Has your ladyship any farther commands ?’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Yes, you may send me a box of red for my cheeks ;—but do not let it be quite so high colour’d as the last.’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ I shall take care to mix it so as to please your ladyship.’

In speaking this she was preparing to make her exit with abundance of low curtseys ; but lady Allmode would not suffer her to depart without taking another dram.

Lady Allmode. ‘ Stay, mrs. Prim,—I must give you a taste of some of my Italian cordials ;—I had a fresh chest came in yesterday, with twelve bottles all of different sorts ;—Will you have the Rosafoli, La Bergamotta, La Floretta, or La Citroni ?’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ Alack, madam, these rich things come so seldom in my way that I am no judge of them ;—but since your ladyship is so good, I shall take a little of any one of them.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Fetch La Floretta, Pinup. — You must know, mrs. Prim, that this is a quintessence extracted from the most fragrant flowers the garden of the world affords.’

Mrs. Prim. ‘ ’Tis extremely fine, indeed, madam ;—I never tasted any thing like it.’

The good woman was so charm’d with the fla-

vour

avour of this exotic liquor, that to prolong it as much as she could, she sipp'd it like a hot dish of Tea ;—lady Allmode perceiving her so delighted, might probably have been induced to give her another glas, if word had not been brought that mr. Ruben the Jew was come to wait upon her ladyship, on which the bottles and glasses were hurry'd away, and mrs. Piim took her leave.

The Jew was presently introduced, and received by lady Allmode with the utmost courtesy and affability, and after making him be seated she said to him :

Lady Allmode. ‘ You are a great stranger, mr. Ruben ;—I have not seen you this long time, and was quite impatient to congratulate you, and the whole Hebrew nation, on the late act pass'd in your favour.’

Ruben. ‘ Me do most humbly dank your ladyship ;—we did, indeed, obtain it wid mush greater facility dan we expected, in spite of all de fine promise had been a long time ago.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ I assure you, mr. Ruben, that I was perfectly transported when I found the bill pass'd both houses.—I dare say his Grace was very serviceable to you on this occasion.’

Ruben. ‘ Yes, madam, we are mush obliged to his Grace, as well as to an honourable gentleman in de lower house ; but our acknowledgments are chiefly to de good Lord B—ps.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ True, mr. Ruben ; for if they had made any opposition to it, or, at least, any worth mentioning, the rabble would presently have taken it into their heads that their religion was in danger, and made as great a clamour against Judaism as in a former reign they did against Popery.’

Ruben. ‘ We do not care what dese Skellams tink ;—if dey offer to affront us, we shall know how

‘ how to be revenged :—we have de same law,
‘ de same priveledge, as demselves.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ The vulgar are not to be regarded ;—they are no more than moving clods of earth ;—but you must own, mr. Ruben, that for the honour of the English nation, the nobility and gentry, those of taste I mean, are entirely on your side.’

Ruben. ‘ Some of dem have been our good friends indeed ; and it is vary true that we have received more favours from de English dan from any nation in the world :—in all de Popish countries, and, indeed, in most of de Protestants one too, ve have been driven from deir cities, and scatter’d like chaff before de vind,—treated as vagrants, and made to veair upon our heads or on our coats, some badge or oder of infamy and contempt ; but by dis hospitable act of de Legislature, ve shall be gather’d together like sheep into one fold, and have de liberty to settle and multiply in dis land of plenty.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ I hope, mr. Ruben, it will prove a second Canaan to you.—But pray what new curiosities does your warehouse afford ?’

Ruben. ‘ It was dat I did come to tell your ladyship ;—me have de fine German work for de head-dress, de ruffle and de tippit for de ladies, far exceeding de Dresden ;—me have de curious little pictures for the closet, from Italy, and handkerchiefs dat will not lose deir scent with vashing ;—den me have some pieces of rich embroidery from Lyons, and gloves from Marseilles ;—snuff of de right Batavian manufacture ;—Japonees under petticoates,—and oder tings, just imported from all parts of de world.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Well,—you Jews are certainly the most charming people upon earth,—you deal in every thing,—Who can deny that you are useful members of a common-wealth ?

‘ — I

‘ —I will come in a day or two to your ware-
house, and rid you of some part of your cargo.’
Ruben. ‘ Me shall be proud to see your lady-
ship ;—but me must now take my leave,—me am
obliged to wait on lady Fantafye,—she did send
to speak vid me dis morning.’

Lady Allnode. ‘ Oh, then I will not detain
you ; I know her ladyship is a good customer.’

Ruben. ‘ Pretty well, madam ;—she pay me,
tho’ she do no body else.—Your ladyship’s most
obedient servant.’

Lady Allnode. ‘ Your’s, mr. Ruben.—Pinup,
wait on mr. Ruben down stairs.’

The entertainment I had hitherto met with at
this lady’s had seem’d so insipid to me, that I was
in the mind to quit her apartment when mr. Ruben
did, and accordingly follow’d him and Pinup out
of the room ;—but the girl had no sooner shut the
chamber door behind her than the goatish Jew
turn’d upon her, and before she was aware, catch’d
her in his arms and half smother’d her with kisses ;
—she struggled with all her might, and having
broke from him, rubb’d her mouth with her apron,
—spit and cry’d,

Pinup. ‘ I wonder at your impudence, mr.
Ruben,—do you think I would be pull’d and
haul’d about by a Jew ?’

Ruben. ‘ Hush,—don’t be so angry, mrs. Pin-
up,—I will give you one pretty ting.’

Pinup. ‘ Hang your pretty things, and your-
self too,—get down stairs, or I will call to some
body to shew you out ;—the Devil shall wait on
you for me,’

The Jew said no more, but ran so hastily down
stairs, that as Pinup was between us, and the pas-
sage we were in very narrow, it was impossible for
me to slip by, without being felt either by the one
or the other.

Pinup

Pinup was returning to her lady's chamber, but met her just coming out in order to pass into another room, on seeing her she said to her :

Lady Allmode. ' I think this girl takes a long time in dressing,—go and see if she is ready, and bid her come to me.'

Finding now that there was some probability of my seeing the young lady, which had been, indeed, the chief motive of my going thither, I attended lady Allmode where she went, and placed myself in one corner of the room; where I did not wait above three or four minutes before Pinup, who had gone immediately on her errand, return'd leading miss Allmode.

She seem'd to be about thirteen or fourteen years of age;—her face was extremely pretty, and I believe nature had given her a shape no less excellent, if it had not been deform'd by her taylor and mantua-maker;—I need not describe in what manner, since it is enough to say, that every thing about her was in the extremity of the present fashion.

On her approach lady Allmode took her by the arm,—turn'd her round several times, and examined her whole dress from head to foot;—after which, looking very well pleased, she said :

Lady Allmode. ' Ay, miss, now you look like what you are; — I protest, I scarce knew you for my own child, in the obsolete condition you came from the country.—Are you not highly delighted with yourself?'

Miss Allmode. ' No, indeed, madam, — I think that since 'tis the fashion to have one's cloaths made in this manner, there ought to be as many chimnies in a room as there are chairs.'

Lady Allmode. ' Sure, miss, you are not cold?'

Miss

Miss Allmode. ‘ It would be very strange, madam, if I were not, when my stays are so contrived that the air comes down to the very bottom of my back, and below the pit of my stomach, and my petticoats so short that I am every minute fancying I have tuck’d them up in order to have my legs and feet wash’d;—then as to my ears, I do declare I feel the wind blow from the one to the other, and pierces into my very brain.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Oh fy, miss;—this being in the country has spoiled you:—whatever is the fashion is never either too cold or too hot.’

Miss Allmode. ‘ I must beg your ladyship’s pardon; for I am certain this fashion is a great deal too much of both;—the tightness of my sleeves, the load of flounces at my elbows, and the huge semi-circles, as heavy as panniers, hanging on each hip, make some parts of me sweat while all the rest are freezing.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Oh hideous!—frightful!—sweat!—what a word is there from the mouth of a fine young lady!—Whenever you have any occasion to complain of too much warmth, you should always say—I perspire:—but I am surprised you should not be charm’d with so becoming a dress.’

Miss Allmode. ‘ I feel uneasy, and quite uncomfortable, madam.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ A little use will reconcile you to it.—Without vanity, miss, you are exceeding handsome;—and now I have made you fit to appear in public, the praises that will be given you, and the fine things said on your beauty, will raise such a gaiety *du coeur*, as will make you forget all that you call uncomfortable.’

Miss Allmode. ‘ I should be glad, madam, if any thing would do that.’

Lady

Lady Allmode. ‘ You must learn to know yourself, miss ;—look in the glass ;—you have fine eyes,—a very lovely mouth,—a well turn’d face, —a delicate complexion, good hair :—in fine, you are a complete beauty ;—but what is beauty without the possessor understands how to manage it to advantage ;—a milk-maid may be a beauty, and no one take any notice of her ;—you must practice the art of displaying every charm, and rendering yourself conspicuous.’

Miss Allmode. ‘ Indeed, madam, I am quite ignorant of these things.’

Lady Allmode. ‘ I perceive you are, miss ;—but that is not your fault ;—my formal aunt has never given you any instructions in this point, I suppose ;—a few lessons, however, will soon put you in the way to make the most of what nature has bestow’d upon you :—In the first place, miss, you must be sure to thrust out your chin as far as you are able ;—when you come into a room always let your chin be the first thing seen of you,—as it were the harbinger of the rest of your person.—Secondly, you must never keep your two hands together, in that stiff country manner you now do, for above the space of a moment ; but throw sometimes the one and sometimes the other carelessly back, and lean it on your hip ; but when you are speaking, be sure to employ both in gestures that may enforce attention to what you say.—Then, as for your eyes, miss,—you must always keep them broad open, and be sure to have the last look of every one that takes notice of you.’

Miss Allmode. ‘ Does your ladyship mean the men as well as the women ?’

Lady Allmode. ‘ Undoubtedly,—the men to choose ;—a polite woman, and who is fashionably

‘ ably ge
‘ either se
Her la
directions
when sh
came to :
self mon
ship a do
cry’d ou

Lady
‘ up this
‘ utmost
‘ Englis
‘ past.’

As I
and had
Solee o
of the d
ly and a
away in

Wherein
comp
rema

VA
man n
very w
chief i
render
impati
imagin
so in a

This
nerally
their

‘ ably genteel, is never ashamed of any thing she
‘ either sees or hears.’

Her ladyship was going on with some farther directions concerning the management of the eyes, when she was interrupted by a footman, who came to acquaint her that a person who call'd himself monsieur Le Petit Solee had brought her ladyship a dozen pair of French shoes, —on which she cry'd out in a kind of transport :

Lady Allmode. ‘ Oh bring him up ! bring him
‘ up this minute ! — I have been involved in the
‘ utmost distress ! — I have had nothing but odious
‘ English shoes upon my feet for a whole week
‘ past.’

As I was now heartily weary of my situation, and had no curiosity to see either monsieur Le Petit Solee or his French shoes, I took the opportunity of the door being open, and left this scene of folly and affectation, regretting the time I had thrown away in being there.

C H A P. VIII.

Wherein the wonderful power of beauty, when accompany'd with virtue, is display'd, in a very remarkable, as well as affecting occurrence.

VANITY, tho' placed rather among the number of the follies than the vices of human nature, is yet sometimes productive of the very worst we can be guilty of ; and the least mischief it does, when indulged to an excess, is to render the person posses'd of it obstinate, proud, impatient of contradiction, deaf to reproof, full of imaginary merit, and apt to despise what is truly so in another.

This weakness, to give it no worse name, is generally ascribed to the softer sex, who being from their very childhood accustom'd to flattery and praise,

praise, are too ready to believe they are in reality the angels and goddesses that they are told they are ; but in my opinion it is doing great injustice to the ladies to say they are the only culpable, since we often find men who, without having the same excuse, are no less liable to fall into the same error.

Mutantius is one of the most lovely, most graceful, and most accomplish'd gentlemen of the present age ;—he has learning, wit, honour, generosity, and good-nature :—in fine,—he is, both in person and mind, such as might give him a just title to universal admiration, were he but a little less conscious of deserving it, or did not set too high a value upon it.

To render his fine qualities yet more conspicuous, he had the advantages of being descended from a very ancient family, is in possession of an ample fortune both in land and money ;—he had not long been arrived at what is commonly called the age of maturity, before several considerable matches were proposed to him ;—all the men of his acquaintance, who had sisters or daughters to be disposed of courted his alliance :—whenever he appear'd, the ladies put on their best looks to engage him ; and not a few there were, who could not help betraying by their eyes the secret languishment of their hearts.

Having his choice of so many, was probably the cause that for a long time hinder'd him from attaching himself to any particular object ;—he was polite and gallant to all, but made a serious address to none ; he would pay his morning devoirs to one, walk in the Mall with another, perhaps dine with a third, drink tea with a fourth, attend a fifth to the play, or some other public entertainment :—in a word, he divided his respects so equally to each, that no one of the fair rivals had

much

much rea
own char

The li
ever, suff
always ar
every gla
that reach
he had se
to be su
inspir'd l
song says

‘ F

Ariste
been we
and other
so low a
daughter
the incor
according
were ma
city, and
in the co
and the c
with one
and by t
her dres
manner
could do

It wa
law's, v
tius wit
beheld h
master o
walk int
was at v
the latter
aside wh
great de

much reason either to exult on the power of her own charms, or dread those of her competitors.

The little deity of soft desires would not, however, suffer a man so form'd for love to remain always among the number of the insensibles ;— every glance shot from Aristella's eyes was a dart that reach'd his very soul ;—all the different graces he had seen in other beauties seem'd now to him to be summ'd up in her, and the passion she had inspir'd him with, made him think her, as the song says,

‘ Fairest where thousands are fair.’

Aristella was, indeed, very lovely, and had been well educated ; but her father, by gaming and other extravagancies, had reduced his estate to so low an ebb, that when divided between four daughters, which he left behind him at his decease, the income was scarce sufficient to buy them cloaths according to their birth ;—two of them, however, were married to tradesmen of good repute in the city, and a third to a gentleman of a small estate in the country ;—Aristella, who was the youngest, and the only one unprovided for, lived sometimes with one and sometimes with another of her sisters, and by this means, having few expences besides her dress, was enabled to appear in as genteel a manner as any woman of a moderate fortune could do.

It was at the house of one of her brother-in-law's, who was a linen-draper, and served Mutantius with Hollands and Cambricks, that she first beheld him ;—happening to call there when the master of the shop was abroad, he was desired to walk into the parlour till his return ;—Aristella was at work with her sister when he came in ; but the latter knowing he was a good customer, threw aside what she was about and received him with a great deal of politeness ;—her husband not coming home

home so soon as he was expected, she made tea, and afterwards order'd wine to be brought.

Mutantius readily accepted the little regale she presented to him, as it gave him the opportunity of feasting his eyes on the charms of her fair sister: — on their entering into conversation the tongue of Aristella lost her nothing of what her eyes had gain'd; and as her beauty had in an instant captivated his heart, so her wit riveted the chain, and made the conquest sure.

The tradesman at last returning, Mutantius, after having agreed for some things he wanted in the shop, and order'd them to be sent home, took an unwilling leave; but carry'd with him an idea which had afterwards more influence over his mind and actions than he at first imagined.

Love in its beginnings, plays wantonly about the heart, tickling it with flattering images; but having once got full possession there, rules with tyrannic sway, and bears down all before it: — Mutantius indulged the pleasing contemplation of Aristella's beauty 'till he was no longer able to live without seeing her, and for this purpose went again to the linen-draper's pretending there were some things he had forgot to bespeak when he was there before.

After having bought those things which the seeming want of had given him an excuse for going thither so soon again, and some previous discourse on ordinary matters, he told the draper that he should be glad to have his wife's advice concerning the trimming of some shirts which were then making for him; — to this the other reply'd, that his wife would think herself honour'd in doing him any service; but that she was at that time unfortunately abroad.

Mutantius was not sorry to hear she was out of the way, and resum'd briskly, — ' Well then, I think it will be equal to me if the young lady who was with her when I had the pleasure of drink-

ing

ing tea
I thought
such a
' You
I think
tius.' —
is gone
she had
constant
now so
' of her

It was
much de-
get from
to be infe-
of Aristot

As the
amorous
tendency
cerning
tive, he
she had
dent on
to the in-
ed into
find a
fires, the
eye of
her, he
tion.

He lo-
by one
posted
mile of
present

Havi-
try, he
where

‘ ing tea here, will do me that favour;—she seem’d,
‘ I thought to have good-nature enough to grant
‘ such a request.’
‘ You mean my sister, sir, cry’d the draper.’—
‘ I think your wife call’d her so, answered Mutantius.’—‘ Yes, sir,—rejoin’d the former; but she
‘ is gone down to Kent this morning.’—‘ I thought
‘ she had lived with you, said Mutantius.’—‘ Not
‘ constantly, sir,’ reply’d he; ‘ but she has left us
‘ now sooner than she would have done on account
‘ of her sister’s lying-in.’

It was easy for a man of so much wit, and of so much design as Mutantius now had in his head, to get from the honest unsuspecting draper all he wanted to be inform’d of in relation to the circumstances of Aristella.

As the inclinations of this gentleman, vehemently amorous as they were, had not at present the least tendency to marriage with the young beauty, concerning whose affairs he had been so inquisitive, he was far from being mortified on hearing she had no fortune, and was in a manner dependent on her kindred; nor thought it less conducive to the interest of his passion that she was removed into the country, where he imagined she might find a more easy method of winning her to his desires, than he could have done in town, under the eye of a sister, who, by the little he had seen of her, he perceived to be a woman of great discretion.

He lost no time, but the very next day, attended by one servant, who he knew to be an adroit fellow, posted down to Canterbury, within a quarter of a mile of which city was the house where Aristella at present resided.

Having no acquaintance in that part of the country, he took up his lodging in one of the best Inns, where pretending that it was mere curiosity to see that

that ancient city, and the fine tombs in the Cathedral, that had brought him thither, several of the neighbouring gentry, as well as townsmen assured him they should be proud of the honour of accompanying him to all those places which most deserved the attention of a traveller.

Among the number of these hospitable persons, was the brother-in-law of Aristella:—it is easy to suppose that Mutantius made use of all the arts he was master of to insinuate himself into the good graces of a person whose acquaintance was so necessary to his design; and indeed, had not this accident happened, there seemed little probability of his accomplishing them; for Aristella kept so close in the house with her sister, that tho' he had been four days at Canterbury, and taken all imaginable pains to get a glimpse of her, he never yet had been so happy.

Mutantius had something in him no less engaging to the men than enchanting to the women;—he knows how to suit himself to the humour of every one he converses with;—it was therefore not difficult for him to cultivate a friendship with a plain country gentleman, who, free from all guile, was equally free from all distrust.

Beechly, for so he was call'd, had no other fault than loving his bottle a little too well, which Mutantius perceiving, fell in with this foible, and thereby gained his whole heart, — as I remember to have read in a very old treatise, entitled, *De Arte Mundi*:

‘ Who would the favour of a patron win,
‘ With flattering his vices must begin.’

Or, as another Author of a more modern date tells us:

‘ Whate'er

‘ Whate’er we do, we would have others do:
‘ Proud to be teachers and examples too.’

But I beg pardon of my reader for detaining his attention with useless quotations to prove what every one is sufficiently convinced of within himself; and shall now proceed with the thread of my narrative.

These two gentlemen were drinking together very late, — Mutantius had ply’d the other so fast with glasses, that he became more than ordinarily intoxicated; — our lover obliged him to suffer himself to be attended home by his footman, and the next morning sent a polite message to enquire of his health; — Beechly took this so kindly, that he came immediately after to the lodgings of Mutantius, to shew that he was well, and to desire he would do him honour of dining with him that day.

‘ My wife,’ said he, ‘ is in the straw; but she has a sister who is at present with us, — a good smart well-behaved girl, and will receive you in the best manner she is able.

It is not to be doubted but the heart of Mutantius flutter’d with the most rapturous sensation, on hearing himself invited to come to a place where he was sure of enjoying the company of that fair creature he so much languish’d to behold, and had taken so much pains to pursue.

It is needless to say that he readily accepted so obliging a summons, nor that he rather anticipated than prolong’d the appointed hour of complying with it; — he was met by Beechly at the gate with all imaginable demonstrations of a sincere welcome, and conducted into the parlour, where Aristella, who soon after enter’d, was presented to him.

Whatever emotions Mutantius might feel in approaching to salute her, they were yet inferior to her’s in the first surprise of seeing

him there; — she had heard her brother Beechly talk of a fine gentleman lately come to Canterbury, and had that morning received orders from him to prepare a handsome dinner for his entertainment; but as she had not heard him mention the name of this new friend, and had no curiosity to ask any thing concerning him, could little expect he was the same she had seen at her other sister's in London.

She had, it seems, from the first interview with him, been posses'd of sentiments in his favour, which, if not altogether so passionate as those she inspired him with, were yet no less soft and tender; but conscious of the vast disparity between their fortunes, she had endeavour'd to check the growth of an inclination, which she thought could only be destructive of her peace, and if ever discover'd, render her ridiculous to the world.

But on this second, and unexpected meeting him again, the stifled wishes of her soul burst out afresh, — a sudden flow of joy rush'd o'er her heart, which, join'd to the surprise she was in, spread a kind of wild, tho' agreeable confusion in her eyes and voice, while she made him those compliments which civility exacted from her to a stranger.

Mutantius, to whose penetrating eyes the change in her countenance was very visible, look'd on it as a happy presage of the success of his design; and the secret pleasure this imagination gave him brighten'd all his air, and added new graces to every thing he said or did, so that poor Aristella became now quite lost in love and admiration.

This day proved, indeed, extremely fortunate to Mutantius; — dinner was no sooner over than Beechly was call'd out to a person who waited to speak with him on some business in another room; — the lover took this opportunity of declaring his passion to his mistress, and relating to her the pains he had taken

taken
made,
gave

Be

—he

which

exotic

—Mu

thing

with a

end o

‘ said

‘ Hall

‘ S

‘ Bee

‘ mak

‘ you

Mu

ly rise

the sa

come

the se

‘ I

‘ mak

‘ that

‘ whe

‘ mak

‘ so y

‘ pleat

‘ being

The

him

in his

the hap

He

in his

be seen

Beech

taken to get a sight of her ; and the answers she made, tho' very modest and discreet, were such as gave him no reason to despair.

Beechly returning broke off their conversation, —he took Mutantius to shew him his gardens, which, tho' not ornamented with statues nor any exotic curiosities, were very pleasant and large ; —Mutantius was lavish in his praises on every thing he saw ; but above all, his fancy seem'd taken with a long grass walk, and a close arbour at the end of it ; —‘ If I had such a walk as this in town,’ said he, ‘ I should never trouble the Mall, Vaux-Hall, nor Ranelagh.’

‘ Since you cannot carry this with you, reply’d Beechly, you shall be extremely welcome to make as much use of it as you think fit while you stay in this part of the world.’

Mutantius thank’d him ; but said he was an early riser, and should chuse such a walk chiefly for the sake of meditation in a morning, and that to come at such hours might give too much trouble to the servants.

‘ I can easily remedy that difficulty, since you make it one, answer’d the other ; there is a door that opens behind the arbour into a little field where I keep a cow ; —I seldom have occasion to make use of the key, and it is at your service, —so you may come in as early or as late as you please, without disturbing any of my family, or being disturbed by them.’

The lover made a thousand acknowledgments to him for this favour, and received the key, which, in his mind, he look’d upon as a sure passport to all the happiness he wish’d at present to enjoy.

He went the very next morning, taking a book in his hand, to prevent suspicion, in case he should be seen, tho’ there was no great danger of that, as Beechly kept but two maids and one man servant,

who, it might be supposed, had too much business in a morning to ramble in the gardens ; but he might reasonably hope to meet with Aristella, who having nothing to employ her time, might probably amuse some part of it in that agreeable place.

It is likely, however, he might have been disappointed for many days together, if fortune had not now befriended him, as she had hitherto done during the course of this adventure.

Aristella was there, indeed, before him, in the same walk, and very near the arbour through which he enter'd—she had come thither to gather Cinque-foil for her sister, the nurse who attended her being apprehensive of her falling into a feverish disorder.

'Tis likely she was little less surprised on seeing him in that place, than she had been when introduced to her by her brother ;—but as I was not present, and have this part of the story from the report of others, can relate nothing of the particulars of their discourse, and only say in general, that he spar'd no vows nor protestations to convince her of his passion, and that he prevail'd on her to return to him again, after having carry'd in the herbs.

His entreaties, join'd to her own secret inclinations, engag'd her to see him the next day ;—this meeting was succeeded by another, that by a third, and so on for several mornings together,—every one of them still more endearing him to her affections ; but, in spite of the pleasure she took in his addresses, she could not keep herself from some doubt of the sincerity of his passion, whenever she reflected on the inequality of their fortunes :—one day, expressing herself very emphatically on that occasion, he cry'd out,—‘ Talk not of fortune,—
‘ by Heaven your heart is all I wish !’—this he repeated

peated
confess

Havi
it prop
courtsh
such as
vantag
wasted
dence
fer of
same t
woman
his wi

If a
Stella,
did thi
was un
flood o
the mo
this ter
and wi
—a vir
her for
—‘ De
‘ that y
‘ ness
‘ ver s
‘ but v

In sp
bour ;—
would
a man,
work i

He
this acc
la’s aff
spairing
mornin

peated so often, and so tenderly, that she at last confess'd,—it was already his.

Having brought her to this point, he now thought it proper to let her know the real aim of all his courtship;—he began with telling her, that beauty, such as hers, merited to be set off with all the advantages of dress and grandeur;—that she had wasted too much of her youth on a mean dependence on her kindred; and concluded with the offer of a large settlement, protesting to her at the same time, that he would never marry any other woman, and that she should live in every thing like his wife except the name.

If a dagger had pierced the gentle breast of Aristella, it could not have given her more pain than did this cruel declaration;—for some moments she was unable to make any reply, but burst into a flood of tears, and discovered all the symptoms of the most violent grief;—he endeavour'd to calm this tempest in her mind, by all the arts that love and wit could inspire;—but all was now in vain,—a virtuous pride, by degrees, got the better of her sorrows, and starting from him, she cry'd out, —‘ Deceitful and ungenerous man!—but think not that your base desires shall triumph over the weakness I have confess'd for you;—no,—I will never see you more, nor henceforth think of you but with horror and detestation.’

In speaking these words she flew out of the arbour;—rage gave wings to her feet, yet Mutantius would certainly have overtaken her, if the sight of a man, whom Beechly had employ'd to do some work in the garden, had not made him turn back.

He went to his lodgings much disconcerted at this accident, but the knowledge he had of Aristella's affection for him kept him from totally despairing;—he repair'd to the dear arbour the next morning, but no Aristella appear'd;—he went

again, but had no better success ;—resolved to see her, if possible, he made a visit at the house, and told Beechly in a free manner, that he was come to take a second dinner with him, to which he reply'd with a compliment suitable to the occasion.

Mutantius was again disappointed,—Aristella hearing he was there, sent word to her brother that she had a violent tooth-ach, and desired he would excuse her from coming down ;—this drove the lover almost to distraction,—he went home, —wrote to her, and made his footman go, as of his own accord, to chat with the servants, and loyter about the house 'till he should see Aristella and deliver the letter to her.

The fellow found means to execute his commission,—Aristella took the letter on his presenting it to her, and went up into her chamber ; but after reflecting a little, would not trust her own heart so far as read this dangerous epistle, following the Poet's advice.

‘ The nymph who hears, inclines to sin ;
 ‘ Who parlies half gives up the town,
 ‘ And rav'rous love soon enters in,
 ‘ When once the out-work's beaten down.’

She therefore put it under a cover, and having sealed and directed it, came down and gave it to the man, saying, —‘ There's my answer to your master's letter.’

Never had the vanity of Mutantius met with so severe a shock, yet could he not forbear revering the virtue he attempted to destroy ;—if before he lov'd, he now ador'd her ; and the more he consider'd her perfections, the more he found her worthy to be his wife ;—yet, when he thought of marriage, the idea of that state was irksome to him :—he knew that at present he was the idol of the fair, but should cease to be so if once he became a husband :—in fine, he could not bear to lose his darling

darling
life with

After
however
solved
her kno
difficult
ing to
neither
in spite
a strata
effect ;

Bee
tiz'd, c
than o
he offe
font, v
ready t
cation
but be
looking
his ov
some t
gaged
say to
‘ the
‘ assur
‘ now
‘ nour
‘ neve
‘ once
‘ sum
‘ mor
‘ does
‘ shall
‘ for
—Bee
per to

darling admiration, yet was equally unable to bear life without the enjoyment of Aristella.

After some debate within himself, his passion, however, got the better of his vanity, and he resolved to marry Aristella ; but which way to let her know he meant to do so, seem'd as great a difficulty as any he had pass'd through in attempting to seduce her :—he was convinced she would neither see him nor receive a letter from him, yet, in spite of all this, love fertile in contrivances, put a stratagem into his head, which had the desired effect ;—it was this :

Beechley's new-born son had not been yet baptiz'd, on account of the mother's having been more than ordinarily indisposed during her lying-in ;—he offered himself to be one of the sponsors at the font, which the other gladly accepted, having already troubled many of his friends on the like occasion :—Aristella could not now avoid his presence, but behaved with so much reserve, scarce ever looking towards him, that a man less conscious of his own merit might have been abash'd.—After some time, when most of the company w're engaged in conversation, he found an opportunity to say to her,—‘ Madam, I beseech you will forgive ‘ the rash proposal I presum'd to make you ;—be ‘ assur'd I have heartily repented of it, and have ‘ now no designs upon you but what are truly ho- ‘ nourable ;’—to which she reply'd,—‘ Sir, I shall ‘ never believe a man means me well who has ‘ once thought so poorly of me.’—‘ I only beg, re- ‘ sumed he, the liberty of entertaining you once ‘ more in private, and if what I have then to say ‘ does not merit your pardon and your favour I ‘ shall leave Canterbury, and perhaps the world, ‘ for ever.’—He could add no more at that time, —Beechly call'd to him to pledge him in a bumper to the young Christian ; but before they part-

ed he found means to enforce what he had last said, and spoke with so moving an air that she consented to see him the next morning.

The consequence of this interview was a full forgiveness for what was past on the side of Aristella, and on that of Mutantius a solemn vow of making her his wife the moment she consented to be so; but added, that there were some circumstances in his affairs which required their marriage should be kept secret for a time:—to this last article she made no direct answer at present, but the next day, when they met again by appointment, suffer'd herself to be overcome by his persuasions, and promised that every thing should be as he would have it.

In fine, it was at last agreed between them that he should return to London in a few days, and that she should follow as soon as her sister's recovery permitted her to take her leave with decency.

Both these lovers were now in a state of perfect contentment, and each of them observed the promise given to the other with the utmost punctuality;—but what afterwards befel them must be the subject of another chapter.

C H A P. IX.

Contains only a continuation of the same narrative, begun in the foregoing Chapter, and will not be concluded in this.

Mutantius having been appris'd, by a letter from Aristella, of the day in which she should come to town, went in his own coach as far as Greenwich to meet her, and conducted her to a very handsome and well furnish'd lodging, in one of the most airy and best streets near Bloomsbury-

bury-S
man and

She
herself
mony
he per
immedi
testation
person a
the first
time sh
he had a

He s
was ov
that re
tigue o

I co
had an
witness
man o
happen
next m
brought

My
she ha
was a
for wa
asking
she re
gentle
of a
them
servan
little o

Sh
young
her li

bury-Square, where he had also provided a foot-man and maid-servant to attend her.

She was at first a little scrupulous of putting herself under his protection, till the sacred ceremony should have united her to him for ever:—he perceived the apprehensions she was under, and immediately relieved them by renewing his protestations, that the next morning should make his person as inviolably her's as his heart had been from the first moment he beheld her, and at the same time shew'd her a ring and marriage licence, which he had already prepar'd for that purpose.

He supp'd with her that evening, but when it was over very respectfully retir'd, to leave her to that repose which he judg'd necessary after the fatigue of her journey.

I come now to that part of the story which I had an opportunity of being both an eye and ear witness of:—I was acquainted with the gentlewoman of the house where Aristella was placed, and happen'd to call there on some business the very next morning after that young beauty had been brought thither.

My friend told me, among other discourse, that she had lett her lodgings at a very high rent; but was a little apprehensive that the person they were for was no better than a kept woman:—on my asking what ground she had for such a suspicion, she reply'd,—that she had lett her lodgings to a gentleman of fortune, call'd Mutantius, for the use of a lady whom he brought to take possession of them the night before, and that he had also hired servants to wait upon her, who she found knew as little of the person they were to serve as she did.

She farther added, that the lady was extremely young, the most beautiful creature she ever saw in her life;—and that she could not help thinking it

a little odd, that such a one should be under the care of so gay and airy a spark as Mutantius.

As I was perfectly acquainted with the character of Mutantius, I was a good deal of opinion that she was in the right;—I advised her, however, to say nothing till she should see farther into the matter, and not lose so beneficial a lodger on a bare conjecture.

She approv'd of what I said, and I took my leave, but not to go home,—what she had told me fill'd me with a curiosity to discover something more of this affair, so went no farther than the first blind alley I found, where I put on my Invisible Belt, and returned again just as Mutantius knock'd at the door,—I enter'd with him and follow'd him up stairs;—the sight of Aristella convinced me that the good woman had not been mistaken in the description she gave me of her;—the lovers ran into each other's arms, and Mutantius looking on her with the greatest tenderness spoke thus:

Mutantius. ‘Now, my dearest Aristella, I am come to put a final end to all your doubts either of my love or honour.’

Aristella. ‘I am pleased to think that the perfect confidence I have shewn in both gives me some sort of claim to the proof you are now about to give of them, since I must confess myself in every other respect so unworthy of you.’

Mutantius. ‘You are worthy of every thing;—but, my dear, you forget that there is another testimony that I expect from you of the regard you have for me.’

Aristella. ‘Name it, that my ready compliance may convince you how happy I think myself in every opportunity of obliging you.’

Mutantius. ‘It is that you will be content that for some time our marriage may be kept a secret.’

Aristella.

Aristella. ' You know I have already promis'd
it.'

Mutantius. ' Yes, — in general terms ; — but
you have sisters who are very dear to you, and
tho' I doubt not of their discretion, I cannot
think a secret safe when trusted in so many hands :
— Will then your love for me enable you to en-
dure their reproaches for your supposed disho-
nour, rather than reveal what is inconvenient for
me to be made known ?'

Aristella. ' The trial is a little severe, but will
not last for ever.'

Mutantius. ' No, my dear, a time will come
when your innocence shall be fully cleared, and
like the sun, shine brighter after this short eclipse ;
— till then, may I depend that the name of
wife and husband shall be known only between
ourselves ?'

Aristella. ' You may.'

Mutantius. ' Swear it then.'

Aristella. ' By all that's sacred.'

Mutantius. ' Hold, my dear ; — I would have
you first understand the full extent of the vow
you are about to make ; — you swear that no
imaginary provocation on my side, nor no unjust
contempt nor ill treatment you may meet with
from the world, sha'l ever extort from you a
confession that you are my wife, till I myself
shall publickly acknowledge you to be so.'

Aristella. ' All this I solemnly swear, and in-
voke Heaven to bless me as I shall religiously
observe it.'

Mutantius. ' Charming, generous creature,
and in return, to prevent all future apprehen-
sions in prejudice of my faith or constancy from
rising in your gentle breast, if it were possible
for me to take a base advantage of the obliga-
tion I have laid you under, and make my ad-
dresses

‘ dresses to another woman on the score of marriage, I here release you from your vow, and leave you at liberty to declare yourself my wife, assert your prior right, and proclaim me for a villain.’

Aristella. ‘ Heaven forbid it should ever come to that.’

Mutantius. ‘ No, my Aristella,—there is no danger, I have already rejected greater offers than ever can be made to me again:—to deal sincerely with you,—there has been always in my nature an extreme repugnancy to the name of marriage; the name of husband was irksome to me;—no woman but yourself had ever charms to reconcile me to it; but your beauty, your sweetness, your unaffected modesty, have now informed my soul, and by degrees will make me as proud of Hymen’s fetters as I should once have been ashamed of them.’

Aristella. ‘ It shall be my whole study to make them easy to you.’

Mutantius. ‘ I know it will;—but come, my love,—a coach waits to carry us to church.—that solemn scene which fixes the everlasting happiness or misery of all who approach it in the manner we do.’

On concluding these words he took her by the hand and led her down stairs,—I was close behind them when they went into the coach, which was order’d to drive to Clerkenwell;—I presently suppos’d he made choice of this place as there was the least danger of his being seen by any one who knew him.

I follow’d on foot, but came time enough to the church to see *Mutantius* resign that liberty he had once set so high a value on as to resolve never to part with;—the ceremony of marriage was performed by the curate of the parish, and the clerk officiated

officiated as father to give away the bride ;—after all was over, Mutantius desired their marriage might be register'd, and a certificate of it given to Aristella ;—both which were accordingly done.

I now left the new wedded pair to dispose of themselves as they thought fit, and return'd to my apartment in order to ruminant at leisure on an adventure which seem'd to me to have in it many inconsistencies.

To find that Mutantius, after having refused some of the best fortunes and most lovely women in the kingdom, should give his hand to a girl like Aristella, who tho' possess'd of every amiable qualification of the mind, was yet as inferior in beauty as in the goods of fortune ; this, I say, afford'd much matter of astonishment to me, yet the injunction he had laid her under of keeping their marriage a secret appear'd to me a still greater subject for speculation.

At first I fear'd he did not mean her fair ; but when the care he took to have their marriage register'd, and a certificate of it to be deliver'd to her, contradicted that opinion, and I began to think, that as fancy is more prevalent than judgment in the affairs of love, he really thought her worthy of being his wife, and would one day publickly acknowledge her to be such, tho' at present the tenderness he had for her was not strong enough to overcome the vanity of being admir'd by others, which he thought would cease, and he should pass unregarded by the rest of the fair sex, when he should be known to have attach'd himself to one by marriage.

The more I thought on this adventure, the more I was confounded ; and the result of all my meditations was, that it must be left to time to unravel the mystery ;—I kept, however, a watchful eye on the behaviour of Mutantius, but was little the wiser

wiser for the pains I took, as I found he lived in the same gay and gallant manner he had always done in respect to the ladies.

It was about a month, as near as I can remember, after his marriage with Aristella, that a young beauty, call'd Elutheria, appear'd in town; — the late death of her father had left her mistress of a very large fortune, and with it, what perhaps was not less pleasing to her, the full enjoyment of that liberty, which, during his life, had been much restrained.

A new face, without the addition of any extraordinary beauty, is of itself sufficient to draw after it a train of admirers; but Elutheria had charms, which, joined to those of novelty, made it not strange that she should soon become the general toast.

The first time Mutantius saw her was at the Playhouse; — he was there with Apamia, — she happen'd to be seated, with two other ladies, in a box just opposite to them; but not knowing who she was, had perhaps taken no notice of her, if Apamia had not indiscreetly mentioned her to him; — I was sitting behind them, and heard this little following dialogue:

Apamia. ‘ Do you see Elutheria yonder?’

Mutantius. ‘ What! she that makes so great a noise in town? — Pray, madam, which is she?’

Apamia. ‘ She in mourning just over-against us. — I find her beauty has but little effect on you, that you did not observe her before.’

Mutantius. ‘ I was too much taken up with what I have more near, madam.’

Apamia. ‘ Nay, for my part, I can see nothing extraordinary in her; — then she is the most insipid creature in the world; — I have been in her company, and she has not a word to say for herself.’

Mutantius.

Mutantius. ‘ Well, I wonder any man can be charm’d with a woman that has not wit ;—one may as well fall in love with a fine picture as with a fine woman without a tongue ; but where wit and beauty are united, as in the divine Apamia, all hearts must yield.’

Apamia. ‘ You flatter me, Mutantius.’

Mutantius. ‘ No, by Heaven !—you are in reality what the poet says of Corrinna.’

‘ All that desire can wish, or fancy form.’

All the answer she gave to this was a look full of languishment, accompany’d with a little pat on his shoulder with her fan, and then turn’d from him to observe what was doing on the stage ;—but in spite of the fine things he had been saying to her, I easily distinguish’d, from the first mention of Elutheria’s name, a certain restlessness in him for a more full view of that celebrated beauty.

He had never been practis’d in the virtue of self-denial, and was not of a humour to put any check on his inclinations, of what kind soever they were ;—he soon after made an excuse to Apamia for leaving her a few minutes, telling her he saw a gentleman on the other side of the house whom he must needs speak with.

The person with whom he pretended to have business was seated at the very end of one of the benches in the pit, just under Elutheria’s box, so that he could not have thought on a more commodious situation for the gratification of his curiosity.

The play acted that night afforded me little matter of entertainment, and I left it at the beginning of the fourth act :—as I was passing behind the boxes, to go out of the house, I met Mutantius returning to Apamia, but first heard him give directions to one of the orange-women to carry a paper of sweetmeats to the lady in mourning, the

next

next box but one to the stage, with the compliments of a gentleman unknown.

This incident, join'd to some others I had been witness of, made me pity poor Aristella, who tho' married infinitely beyond her hopes in point of fortune, and to one she passionately loved, could not be expected to enjoy a lasting or sincere happiness with a man of so vain, so volatile, and so uncertain a disposition.

A very little time afterwards convinc'd me that Mutantius was not the less general lover for being a husband,—he met Elutheria at the route of a lady of his acquaintance ;—she appear'd more lovely to him at this second sight even than at the first, and the sprightliness of her humour gave a double lustre to the graces of her person ;—she has, indeed, charms which might inspire the most tender emotions in the heart of any man,—that of Mutantius could not but confess their force, and the liking he had for her, join'd to the ambition of being first in the esteem of a woman who was at present the first in the esteem of most men, made him omit nothing that might conduce to the gratification of that darling passion.

His fine person,—his flowing wit,—his engaging manner of address, had made many conquests without designing it ; but here,—where he exerted all his rhetoric,—called the dying Cupids to his eyes, and seem'd to breathe nothing but love and soft desire, it is not to be wonder'd at that he stole upon the mind of a young maid, altogether unprepared for so dangerous a rencontre.

In fine, she lov'd him,—lov'd and admir'd him to that infatuated degree, that she was proud of doing so,—glory'd in the chains of her too amiable vanquisher, and attempted not to conceal them.

Apamia,

Apamia, who for some months had thought herself the supreme sovereign of his heart, was almost distracted on finding she had so powerful a competitor; — all the inconstancy of Mutantius could not render him less dear to her; — but the charms of her for whose sake she thought herself neglected became so odious in her eyes, that she spar'd nothing which female wit and malice could suggest to blacken her character, and make her appear contemptible to the world.

The unguarded conduct of Elutheria, assisting the envy of her rival, this late celebrated beauty became as much despis'd as she had been once ador'd; but all absorb'd in love and its fallacious joys, she felt not the weight of her misfortune, because she saw it not, 'till Mutantius himself had gain'd his point, and shew'd the world he had bore away the prize so many in vain had aim'd at, open'd her deluded eyes by treating her with a cold indifference and palpable neglect.

But now, — methinks I hear the reader cry out with some impatience, — ‘ How did Aristella bear all this time? How could she, the lawful wife of this inconstant man, support the share that others had in his affections? ’ — It is, indeed, impossible for me to say in what manner she would have resented so provoking a circumstance if known to her; but she liv'd too retir'd for this misfortune to reach her ears; — she had, however, other troubles more than sufficient for human fortitude to sustain, but of what nature they were must be left to the next chapter to explain.

C H A P. X.

The catastrophe of this adventure cannot fail of exciting compassion in the breasts of my fair readers, and also afford much matter of speculation to those of the other sex.

TH E pursuit of other adventures, which shall be inserted in their proper places before the conclusion of this work, hinder'd me for a long time from going to see in what manner Aristella was treated by Mutantius; but at length, some uneasy reflections on her account raised an impatience in me to know the certainty of her present state.

Accordingly I went one day to the house where she was lodg'd; but, to my great surprise, found she had made but a short stay there, and had been removed a considerable time before my coming: ---on my asking some questions of my friend concerning the reason of it, the good woman answer'd me in these or the like terms:

‘ The affair was just as I expected, said she; ‘ I pity the poor young gentlewoman, indeed,--- ‘ she has not the looks of such a one;---but I suppose she has been decoy'd by abundance of fair promises:---I wonder, however, that Mutantius knowing the character of my house, and that I always had people of the best fashion lodge with me, should offer to bring a kept mistress under my roof; but I was very free with him,--- ‘ I told him my mind very plainly on the occasion.’

‘ And pray what answer did he make, cry'd I, with some impatience,---when you call'd her a kept-mistress?’

‘ Very

‘ Ve
‘ he on
‘ a frie
‘ treat
‘ natur
‘ would
‘ desir’
‘ —on
‘ an ig
‘ did r
‘ was r
‘ afterv
The
me extr
Aristell
through
had tak
prostitu
I wo
cret of
Aristell
scrupul
ing the
content
the plac
ed, reso
atonem
in priva
public.

I wa
day I
stead of
cern I
reader,

Arist
of the
marks o
nance;

‘ Very little to the purpose, truly, resum’d she ;
‘ he only said that she was a gentlewoman, and a
‘ a friend of his, and as such expected I should
‘ treat her civilly ;—I told him it was not in my
‘ nature to treat any body uncivilly, but that I
‘ would encourage no such doings, and therefore
‘ desir’d he would provide another lodging for her ;
‘ —on this he flew into a passion,—told me I was
‘ an ignorant foolish woman, and the like :—but I
‘ did not regard his bouncing, and as he found I
‘ was resolute, took his madam away in a few days
‘ afterwards.

The manner in which this woman spoke made me extremely commiserate the condition of poor Aristella, who, though a lawful wife, was obliged, through the caprice of Mutantius, and the vow she had taken, to endure all the contumely due to a prostitute.

I would have given almost any thing but the secret of my Invisible Belt and Tablets to have clear’d Aristella’s innocence in the fullest manner to this scrupulous gentlewoman ; but as there was no doing the one without the other, I was compell’d to content myself with getting out of her directions to the place where this much injur’d beauty was remov’d, resolving to take the first opportunity to see what atonement the behaviour of Mutantius made to her in private, for the injustice he did her reputation in public.

I was so lucky as to find them together the first day I went ; but the scene I was witness of, instead of diminishing, very much added to the concern I had carry’d with me, as every good-natur’d reader, on my reciting it, will believe.

Aristella was sitting very melancholy in one corner of the room,—Mutantius in another, with all the marks of discontent and ill-humour in his countenance ;—by what follow’d, it appears that she had been

been speaking somewhat to him in relation to the discovery of their marriage;—I doubt not, by what I saw of her behaviour both before and afterwards, that she express'd herself in very gentle terms on the occasion; but the bare mention of such a thing, to a man of his present way of thinking, was of itself a sufficient offence.

I have already describ'd the posture I found him in; but just as I enter'd the room he reply'd to what she had said, and that reply drew on a conversation which let me into the whole of both their sentiments.

Mutantius. ‘ I am sorry to find you have so little regard for me; and indeed so little prudence, as whenever I am with you to fall eternally upon a subject which you know is so disagreeable to me.’

Aristella. ‘ If you lov'd me half so well as you once pretended, it would not be so disagreeable; — and you would, at least, acquaint me with the reasons which oblige me to live in the manner I do.’

Mutantius. ‘ Perhaps it is not proper for me to reveal them.’

Aristella. ‘ Oh, Mutantius:—I know not what to think of my condition.—Why did you marry me?’

Mutantius. ‘ Because I then liked you better than any other woman, and if I do not still continue to do so it is your own fault;—I hate to be teaz'd:—besides, the conditions of our marriage were that it should be kept a secret.’

Aristella. ‘ Yes,—for a time.’

Mutantius. ‘ That time will not be shorten'd by your impatience.’

Aristella. ‘ It may, —for if it last much longer my heart infallibly must break.’

Mutantius.

Mutantius.
 ‘ such
 ‘ when
Aristella.
 ‘ become
 ‘ cause
Mutantius.
 ‘ serious
 ‘ humor
 ‘ seem
 ‘ most
 ‘ I not
 ‘ sisters
 ‘ ty help
 ‘ now g
 ‘ an allo
 ‘ beyond
 ‘ all this
Aristella.
 ‘ life of
 ‘ me wi
 ‘ people
 ‘ civility
 ‘ alien to
 ‘ never p
 ‘ never
 ‘ ture to
 ‘ I shoul
 ‘ especial
 ‘ of ther
 ‘ putatio
 ‘ without
Mutantius.
 ‘ plaints,
Aristella.
 ‘ what in
 ‘ ought
 ‘ on;—y

Mutantius. ‘ Pish,—women’s hearts are not of such brittle stuff ;—the head is in more danger, when swell’d with senseless pride and vanity.’

Aristella. ‘ Indeed, sir, I think it would at least become you to be a little more serious on the occasion.’

Mutantius, ‘ With all my heart, madam,—as serious as you please ;—for faith I am not in a humour to be very merry : — seriously then, you seem to me to be one of the most ungrateful, and most unreasonable women under the sun.—Have I not taken you from a mean dependence on your sisters, who I believe could but ill spare the scanty helps you received from them ?—Have you not now good lodgings, servants to wait on you, and an allowance sufficient to support you in a fashion beyond what you could ever have expected ?—yet all this is nothing in your account.’

Aristella. ‘ Nothing, when balanced against a life of infamy :—the very servants you upbraid me with, despise me while they serve me ;—the people of the house treat me but with an enforced civility ; — I pass my days as one who was an alien to the world, and had no business in it ;— never partake the joys of social conversation, — never visit, nor am visited, and scarce dare venture to breathe the freshness of the open air, lest I should be seen by any who have known me, especially by my sisters, who, mean as you think of them, know how to set a just value upon reputation, and to scorn all the riches of the earth without it.’

Mutantius. ‘ A very fine catalogue of complaints, truly.—Have you any more to add ?’

Aristella. ‘ Yes,—one thing more, which, with what indifference soever you may now regard me, ought not methinks, to escape your consideration ;—you know I am far advanced in my pregnancy ;

‘ nancy ;—perhaps too of a son ;— and can you support the thoughts, that an infant, born the lawful heir of your estate and name, shall be saluted, on his first seeing light, with the odious title of spurious offspring,—a bastard ?’

Mutantius. ‘ What will he be the worse,—unless you expect to have so wise a child as to know what is said of him as soon as he comes into the world ?’

Aristella, ‘ Oh, Mutantius !—Mutantius !—this is cruel dealing.’

She said no more, but wept bitterly ;—Mutantius, who it must be own’d has some good-nature, seem’d much mov’d at seeing her thus, and having look’d on her some moments with a great deal of tenderness, bid her come to him ;— she obey’d, but advanced with the most sorrowful and dejected air ;— he pull’d her to him, — made her sit upon his knee, and kissing away the tears which abundantly stream’d from her lovely eyes down even to her bosom, he spoke thus :

Mutantius. ‘ Come, my poor Aristella, do not be so foolish, — you have no cause for weeping, — you know yourself virtuous, — and I know you are so,—and have no need to be afflicted at the mistaken opinion others may have of you, — especially as it is not to last always.’

Aristella. ‘ If I were certain when this event would happen, even though it were much longer than I hope it will, I should with patience wait.’

Mutantius. ‘ You must depend for that upon my love and honour ;—it is not in my power to assign the very day and hour :— to deal sincerely with you, — I have been a railer at marriage, — have refus’d offers of that nature as much above my expectations as I was above your’s, — and I cannot all at once submit to be pointed at for a husband, and hear people laugh and cry out,—that I had

‘ I ha
‘ you
‘ get
‘ in
‘ of
‘ and
‘ pens
‘ who
‘ disc
‘ that

She
injunc
the oth
and bi
der a
tavern
as he d
and to
and fail
to deli
went t
low-up
the fam

Foot
‘ was
‘ nou
‘ you
Mu
I st
and fa

“ I
“ T
“ my
“ ly;

“ I had thrown myself away ; but this, my dear, “ you may assure yourself, that I will endeavour to “ get rid of these scruples as soon as possible ; — “ in the mean time, I will give you as much “ of my company as can be spar’d from business “ and other attachments which are not to be dis- “ pensed with ; — I came on purpose to devote this “ whole day to you, drive me not from you by your “ discontent ; — kiss me, and give me your promise “ that you will be entirely easy.”

She comply’d readily with the first part of this injunction, and said she would do the best to perform the other ; — with this he seem’d highly satisfy’d, and bid her ring the bell for a servant to go and order a dinner to be prepar’d for them at an adjacent tavern and sent home ; — just as she was about to do as he desir’d, her maid came running into the room and told him that one of his footmen was below, and said he had something of the utmost consequence to deliver to him ; — Mutantius, on hearing this, went to the top of the stair-case and call’d the fellow-up, who presented him with a letter, saying at the same time,

Footman. “ From Apamia, sir, — her footman “ was so preffing to have it deliver’d to your ho- “ nour, that I promis’d I would endeavour to find “ you and bring her ladyship an answer.”

Mutantius. “ You did well.”

I stood close behind him while he open’d the letter, and saw it contain’d these lines :

To MUTANTIUS.

“ Dear Agreeable,
“ THIS subpoena demands your presence at a
“ court of Belles and Beaux, to be held in
“ my drawing-room this evening at six precise-
“ ly ; — fail not to come on penalty of forfeiting
“ your

“ your character of politeness, nor leave behind you
 “ any of those talents which will serve to render the
 “ sacrifice we propose to mirth and gayety com-
 “ plete ; — you know yourself the life and soul of
 “ conversation ; your absence, therefore, at this time,
 “ would be unpardonable : — if your watch should
 “ happen to go too fast, or any other accident
 “ make you anticipate the appointed hour, and you
 “ come before the rest of the company, you need
 “ not apprehend being turn'd back, by

“ Yours, &c. &c.

“ APAMIA.”

Having read this little billet, he bid his man fly to Apamia and carry her his compliments, with an assurance that he would do himself the honour to be punctual in obeying her commands ; — then turn'd into the room and said to Aristella,

Mutantius. ‘ I am sorry, my dear, I cannot stay
 ‘ with you as I promised ; — some friends desire
 ‘ my company this afternoon, and I cannot possi-
 ‘ bly excuse myself from complying with their re-
 ‘ quest.’

Aristella. ‘ You will dine with me, however ?’

Mutantius. ‘ It will be utterly inconvenient for
 ‘ me to do so ; — it is now near two o’clock, — I
 ‘ am to meet the company at five, and must new
 ‘ dress ; so you will excuse me.’

Aristella. ‘ When may I hope to see you again ?’

Mutantius. ‘ To-morrow, perhaps, — or next
 ‘ day, — I cannot say exactly when ; but I will come
 ‘ soon. — Farewell, — make yourself easy.’

In speaking these last words he gave her a slight
 salute, and went down stairs carelessly humming part
 of an Italian air, leaving his turtle to moan the ab-
 sence of her inconstant mate.

By what I had now seen of the behaviour and
 disposition of *Mutantius*, I found reason to believe

it

it wou
 himself
 resolve
 sitions
 intellig

Th
 I expe
 which
 tulation
 to enjo
 and so
 the po
 and th
 ackno
 that sh

Ari
 with
 Beech
 hinder
 by the
 sent w
 accom
 which
 conseque
 but tha
 would
 ing abi
 tain no
 this po

As
 power
 what
 the tw
 as the
 without
 doing
 had a
 very w
 VOI

it would be yet a great while before he would bring himself to make a declaration of his marriage, so resolved not to take the trouble of any farther inquiries, but wait till common fame should give me intelligence of it.

This event however, happen'd much sooner than I expected; but was brought about by an accident which excited the extremest pity instead of congratulations;—the unfortunate Aristella was not born to enjoy a happiness she so ardently had wish'd for, and so long been made to hope;—death alone had the power to give what life in vain had waited for; and the same breath which told me Mutantius had acknowledged her for his wife, inform'd me also that she was no more.

Aristella, on her leaving the country, was charg'd with letters and some little presents from Mrs. Beechly to her two sisters in London; but being hinder'd from executing this commission in person, by the obligation Mutantius had laid her under, she sent what was entrusted to her care by a porter, accompany'd with a little billet from herself; in which she told them,—that an affair of the utmost consequence kept her at present from seeing them, but that she hoped to do so in a short time, and would then acquaint them with the reasons for having absented herself, and begg'd they would entertain no unfavourable thoughts of her conduct in this point.

As she was circumstanced, it was not in her power to have acted otherwise than she did; yet what satisfaction could such a letter as this give to the two sisters?—for a girl, so young and beautiful as she was, to banish herself from her kindred, without acquainting them with the motive of her doing so, or the place to which she was retir'd, had a right to raise in them conjectures of the very worst sort:—they were almost distracted at

the thoughts of her supposed ruin, and spar'd no pains to find her out, in order to bring her home, and snatch her from the shame they imagi'd she involved in.

Fruitless was their search for a long time; but chance, at length, discover'd to them not only where she lived, but also that she was supported by a gentleman; and, in fine, that she was look'd upon as a kept-mistress: — quite transported with grief and rage, they went to the house where she was lodg'd, and the door happening to be open, flew up stairs without any ceremony and burst in upon her; — the sight of her, for her pregnancy was very visible, added to the passions they were before enflam'd with; — they reproach'd, — they scild'd her in the most bitter terms, while poor Aristella, bound by the fatal oath she had taken, could say nothing in defence of her innocence, but what served to convince them more fully of her guilt.

After having loaded her with opprobrious names, and railed themselves quite out of breath, they left her with the same precipitation they had come, vowing never more to see or think of her as a sister.

Impossible is it for any one to conceive what the soul of Aristella suffer'd in this shocking stroke, — conscious of innocence, yet labouring under all the appearance of guilt: — scandaliz'd, abus'd by those to whom she had been so dear, yet incapable either of defending her wrong'd virtue, or of blaming the severity she was treated with for her suppos'd fall; — every passion that can agitate the human heart at once assail'd, and overwhelm'd her with a variety of anguish; the force of which had such an effect upon her as to cause an abortion that same night, and also to throw her into convulsions,

sions, which in a few hours render'd her life despair'd of by all about her.

In her intervals, between those fits which depriv'd her of all sense and motion, she cry'd out for Mutantius, — ask'd where he was, and said she could not die without seeing him; — messengers were immediately dispatch'd to him with this dreadful message; — he came on hearing it, — he seem'd greatly affected at the condition he found her in, but was much more so when he was informed by her maid what it was had thrown her into it; — she was insensible on his entrance, but recovering soon after, and seeing him so near her, catch'd hold of his hand, and with agonies inexpressible, said to him, — ‘ Oh ! Mutantius, you now will be rid of a tie you have been ashame'd to own.’ — ‘ No, by Heaven ! cry'd he, Live, live, Aristella, and I will declare to all the world that you are my wife, — my lawful married wife.’

Whether it was this sudden rush of joy, on hearing him speak these words, that was too powerful for her weakness to sustain, or that the lamp of life was wasted by the agonies she had before endur'd, is altogether uncertain, but she expir'd that moment, yielding up her last breath on the bosom of her too late repenting husband.

Love, pity, and remorse, now engross'd all his faculties; — he kept his promise, acknowledg'd her for his wife, had her intomb'd, with the greatest funeral pomp, in his own family vault, and paid all imaginable honours to her memory; whether he will ever relapse into his former vanities it is time alone must shew; — but at present this once gay thoughtless rover, either is, or affects to be, lost to the joys he lately was so fond of, — behaves with the utmost indifference towards the fair sex, — seldom goes to any public place, — sees but little company

at home ; and, in fine, seems to be in every thing the very reverse of what he was.

This change, together with the occasion of it, was a terrible disappointment to many a flaunting belle who had plum'd herself on his devoirs ; but Apamia and Elutheria were the most deeply affected by it ; — both these ladies had, in fact, too liberally rewarded his pretended passion not to be overwhelm'd with grief and spite at the discovery of the deception he had put upon them, and that the heart they had labour'd to engross, and paid so dear a purchase for, had been the right of another before he had ever seen either of their faces.

But Apamia, who, besides a great spirit, had a good deal of the coquette in her nature, got rid of the chagrin more easily than her fair rival had the power to do ; — that unhappy beauty, finding herself lost to love as well as to reputation, grew sick of the world, and retir'd into the country, resolving to return no more to a place which had been so fatal both to her honour and repose.

As to the sisters of the unfortunate Aristella, they were seiz'd with the most deep affliction, when they came to know the sad effects their rash resentment had occasion'd ; which may serve as a warning to all persons not to be over hasty in censuring actions, the true meaning of which they cannot immediately comprehend.

BOOK

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

Is dedicated entirely to the Ladies, as it relates an adventure which nearly concerns them to take notice of.

AMONG all the numerous Modes which the wantonness of luxury has of late years introduced into this kingdom for the destroying of time, I know of none more fatal to the virtue and reputation of the female sex than Masquerades—I mean, as that amusement is at present conducted.

Indeed when a select company of ladies and gentlemen agree among themselves, or are invited by some person of condition, to divert each other in such disguises as their several fancies shall make choice of, as practised in France and some other polite places, the case is widely different; for there, after passing a few hours in music, dancing, and pleasant raillery, according to the characters they assume, the masks are all thrown aside, and everyone appears such as he is;—so that none will venture to talk or act beneath a vizard in such a manner, as when he stands reveal'd, will either reflect shame on himself, or give offence to those he has been entertaining;—Masquerades, thus managed, I cannot but allow to be not only innocent but laudable amusements, as they serve to whet the wit and exhilarate the mind.

But here,—sorry am I to say it,—the Masquerade houses may with propriety enough be call'd shops, where opportunities for immorality, profaneness, obscenity, and almost every kind of

vice, are retailed to any one who will become a customer; and at the low rate of seven and twenty shillings, the most abandon'd Courtezan, the most profligate Rake, or common Sharper, purchases the privilege of mingling with the first Peers and Peeresses of the realm, and not seldom affronts both modesty and greatness with impunity.

I perceive, to my very great satisfaction, that there are some Ladies, who, touch'd with a just sense of what is owing to their dignity, are determined not to expose themselves any more in a place where, if no worse ensues, the most licentious freedoms of speech, at least, are often offer'd to the chaste ears; and I am not without hope that the influence of their example will prevail on many others to do the same, so that next season the assemblies at the Masquerade-house will be composed of such only as are fit to herd together.

For the benefit, however, of the unwary, and those who by their small acquaintance in town are ignorant of the usage and customs of these dangerous amusements, it will not be amiss to relate an unhappy adventure which I was witness of, and may serve as a warning to all who are truly innocent and desire to remain so.

Alexis and Matilda were the son and daughter of two gentlemen who lived at a small village near Newcastle upon Tyne;—they had loved each other even before either of them well knew what was meant by the passion, and as their understandings ripen'd, their inclinations increased in proportion:—hope, for some time, gild'd the prospect of their mutual wishes; but, when they least expected, a stop was put to the consummation by an unfortunate disagreement happening between their parents.

Alexis was forbid to see Matilda, and Matilda ever to think on Alexis; but these commands had little authority over hearts so fondly enamour'd as theirs;

theirs
vance
inspir'
as to
by le
views

It
been
after,
eile
tilda,
him,
loving

M
had a
thing
fessio
that
him a
little
sent

T
much
ver b
a pla
prou
pleas
he w
shou

A
arriv
—A
som
whic
Mat

A
min
his

theirs;—they form'd the most romantic contrivances to keep alive the flame with which each had inspir'd the other, some of which succeeded so well as to enable them to continue a tender intercourse by letters, and even to gain some private interviews.

It was the father of Alexis who of the two had been the most refractory, and he dying a small time after, the young gentleman found means to reconcile matters so effectually with the parents of Matilda, that they at length consented to give her to him, and completed the happiness of the equally loving and beloved pair.

Matilda, whose every care, and hope, and joy, had all been center'd in her dear Alexis, had nothing now to wish beyond what she was in possession of; and Alexis thought himself so bless'd, that he even defied the power of fortune to give him any cause of disquiet;—fatal security!—How little dependence for the future is there on the present good?

They had not long enjoy'd the sweets of this so-much-desir'd. union, before Matilda, who had never been in London, express'd some curiosity to see a place she had heard so much talk of;—Alexis, proud to embrace every opportunity of giving her pleasure, immediately took the hint, and told her he was ready to conduct her thither as soon as she should be prepar'd for her departure.

Accordingly they set out from the country, and arriv'd in London about the middle of September;—Alexis took ready furnish'd lodgings, in a handsome house near St. James's, for six months, in which time he thought he should be able to shew Matilda every thing worth her seeing in town.

Alexis had received his first precepts at Westminster school, and having no relations in London, his father requested me, by letters, to call some-

times at the house where he was boarded, and have an eye over his behaviour;—I did so, and the advice I gave him being deliver'd not in a magisterial but friendly manner, the lad conceived a very great affection for me from that time, and has preserved it ever since;—he made me the compliment of a first visit on his coming to town,—told me how happy he was, and begg'd I would be no stranger to the fair person who had made him so.

I accepted the invitation, and went the next day;—on his presenting Matilda to me I was struck with the extrekest admiration; for besides a graceful air and shape, a delicate complexion, fine eyes, a set of the most lovely features I ever saw in one face; and, in fine, every thing that could constitute a perfect beauty, there was such a sweet simplicity, — such a cheerful unaffected innocence shone through the whole, and brighten'd every grace, that I was in a manner dazzled, and could not forbear crying out with Carlos in the play,

‘ If the face be the index of the mind,
‘ She has a thousand treasur'd virtues there.’

Alexis was quite transported at the tokens I gave of my approbation of the choice he had made;—the charming Matilda seem'd also highly pleas'd; but I could easily perceive she was not so through the vanity of hearing any praises on herself, but meerly because her dear Alexis was justified in the opinion of one whom she saw he look'd upon as his friend.

But how great soever the satisfaction was which this happy couple received from my behaviour towards them, I think it could scarce exceed what I felt in my own bosom, on finding so perfect a harmony, so uncounterfeited a tenderness, so warm an affection, reciprocally given and paid between

two

two p
whose
on the
the st
rality.

Ale
he we
few p
a-stran
having
sough
ance,
a thir

As
journe
with t
or pla
by he
Royal
Paul'
Hous
minst

I a
where
the v
pleas
she t
princ
was
Land
very
ing o
meet
husba
own
‘

‘ M
‘ ing

two persons united in the manner they were, and whose love was not built on partial inclination, but on the real merits of each other, and confirm'd by the strongest principles of reason, virtue, and morality.

Alexis had never been but once in London since he went from school, and consequently knew but few people in it; as for Matilda, she was entirely a stranger to every body here,—yet both of them having all they wish'd for in each other, neither sought after or desir'd to make any new acquaintance, but kept always together, and never wanted a third person of their party.

As the sole excitement Matilda had to take a journey to London, was to gratify her curiosity with the sight of it, there was no eminent structure or place of note to which she was not conducted by her endearing husband;—he carry'd her to the Royal-Exchange, the Tower, the Cathedral of St. Paul's, the Palace at St. James's, the Parliament House, and Collegiate Church of St. Peter's, Westminster.

I accompanied them in the last mentioned tour, where, as we were walking and taking a survey of the venerable monuments of the illustrious dead, it pleased me much to observe the particular notice she took, above all others, of the Tomb of that princess of England, who, when her royal consort was wounded by a poison'd arrow in the Holy Land, and no other means remain'd for his recovery but by sucking out the venom from the bleeding orifice, willingly undertook the task, proud to meet an inevitable death to preserve the life of a husband whose safety was dearer to her than her own.

‘ How happy was this princess, said the sweet Matilda, in having such an opportunity of testifying her duty and conjugal affection?’ — ‘ Few

‘ women, madam, answer’d I, would think themselves so, or make the same use of it she did.’—‘ They must then, return’d she with some warmth, have souls little capable of any sincere tenderness, or of a just sense of what is owing to that mysterious union, which makes the husband the far better part of the wife.’

Alexis had too much love and gratitude in his nature not to reply to what she said, in terms which shew’d how deeply he was touch’d with it, and would doubtless have expatiated much longer upon the theme, if they had been in any other place.

After having made her better acquainted with every thing in this Metropolis, than many can pretend to be who have pass’d their whole lives upon the spot, he went with her to Hampton-Court, Windsor-Castle, Kensington, and the royal Hospitals of Greenwich and Chelsea, and also to several fine Villas on the banks of the river; — it would be endless to repeat the various excursions they made, so I shall only say, that there was nothing omitted to be shewn to her which might either enlarge her ideas or entertain her fancy.

A new scene of diversions open’d as the winter season came on; — Plays, Operas and Masquerades now began to attract the attention of all who would be thought polite; — the two first of these amusements Matilda was not altogether a stranger to, having often seen somewhat like them acted by strolling companies in the country; but she had not the least notion of Masquerades, and the little account Alexis was able to give her, making her more impatient to know what sort of entertainment they afforded, it may be easily supposed, by what has been already said, that so indulgent a husband would not suffer her to continue long in suspense; — it may be too, that he had some curi-

osity

osity of his own to gratify in this point, having, it seems, never been at a Masquerade himself.

Tickets accordingly were purchased, and masquing habits hired ; — I happen'd to make a morning visit the day they were to go, and found Matilda very busy in ornamenting a little Hat and Crook ; — the moment I enter'd the room she told me, with the greatest pleasure in her countenance, that she was to be at the Masquerade that night, and was to assume the character of a Shepherdess ; I reply'd that she could not take upon her one more suitable to her youth and innocence : — we then fell into some discourse concerning Masquerades ; — Alexis would fain have persuaded me to accompany them, but I excused myself in the words of an old blind fiddler, who was in the streets when I came in, playing and singing to his instrument these lines :

‘ In youth when I did love, --- did love-a
‘ Methought it was wond’rous sweet-a
‘ But now I am old, threescore and above-a,
‘ To be grave is wond’rous meet-a.’
‘ If you have no better excuse than this cry’d,
‘ Alexis laughing, it will not serve your turn.’ ---
‘ I do not know, indeed, whether it will or not,
‘ reply’d I, for when old people affect to be gay,
‘ they ought to do it under a mask, to prevent be-
‘ ing laugh’d at by the young ; --- but I have ano-
‘ ther reason, added I, which will admit of no ob-
‘ jection ; --- I am both to dine and sup with some
‘ friends.’

This was, in effect, no false pretence, for I really had an engagement upon my hands, which to comply with, I took my leave of Alexis and Matilda much sooner than I should otherwise have done.

The company I went to breaking up ‘about ten o’clock, which was somewhat sooner than I had expected.

expected, it came into my head, in spite of the little liking I ever had to Masquerades, to step in and see how Matilda, who had not been accustom'd to any great assemblies, would behave among such a mingled rout.

In things of small consequence I seldom gave myself the trouble of a second thought, so, pursuing this start of curiosity, I went to a Habit-shop, put on a Domine, and hasted to that babel of hurry and confusion.

It was no difficult matter for me to discover the persons I sought after, as I knew the dresses they were in ;—I soon distinguish'd the beautiful Shepherdess, and her husband by the blue Domine I had seen lying on a table in his dining-room :— I perceived there were many eyes upon Matilda ; for tho' her face was conceal'd, her lovely hair, which with a studied negligence hung in ringlets almost to her shoulders, her alabaster neck, her lovely shape and sprightly air, had somewhat in them sufficiently attractive.

But there was one who above all the rest seem'd particularly attentive to her motions,—he was in the habit of a Huntsman, a character which I afterwards had reason to say to myself suited very well the intentions he had in his head that night :—which way soever Matilda turn'd he took care not to lose sight of her ; but as she kept close to Alexis, neither he nor any one else had an opportunity of speaking to her.

I hover'd as near them as I could without being taken notice of, and it gave me a good deal of diversion, to see the surprize this innocent country lady testified at hearing the freedoms with which some people, who seemed to be perfect strangers, accosted each other ;—one incident in particular, which tho' it had nothing extraordinary in it at a

Masque-

Masque
this :
A H
in an ac
a half
sembly,
him, c
decrepi
‘ vanity
good d
lady, c
slap on
terms :
Lady
‘ what
‘ your
Her
‘ as yo
‘ dang
‘ leave
‘ tifee
‘ your
‘ herbt
Laa
‘ regi
Her
‘ pref
‘ cont
Laa
Her
Laa
He
W
comp
them
tilda,
so ast
herse

Masquerade, appear'd wonderful to her ;—it was this :

A Hermit, with more furrows on his vizard than in an acre of plough'd land, and a beard a foot and a half long, mingled with the thickest of the assembly, and leaning on his stick and looking round him, cry'd out with a voice conformable to his decrepid appearance :— ‘Vanity !—vanity !—oh ! vanity of vanities !’ This exclamation drew a good deal of laughter, but no reply, ’till a smart lady, dress'd in a Spanish Bonaroba, gave him a slap on the shoulder, and saluted him in these terms :

Lady. ‘ Well, — my good father Sanctity, what makes that venerable beard of yours out of your cell at this time of night ?’

Hermit. ‘ I came to warn such wanton minxes as you of your follies ;—to warn you of the dangers of the flesh and blood ;—to bid you leave off your Jellies, your Eringos, your Ratifee, and your Viper-wine ;—to bid you mortify your carnal thoughts, and do penance in cooling herbs and fountain-water.’

Lady. ‘ Pray, is Arbor-Vitæ among your regimen of simples ?’

Hermit. ‘ Yes, I have one root ; but I never prescribe it without knowing the complexion and constitution of the person.’

Lady. ‘ What do you think of mine ?’

Hermit. ‘ First let me know the Symptoms.’

Lady. ‘ As how ?’

Hermit. ‘ I will tell you.’

With these words he drew her apart from the company, and after a short conversation between themselves, went away together,—at which Matilda, who had lost no part of their behaviour, was so astonish'd that she could not forbear expressing herself to her husband on that occasion in terms which

which made the Huntsman, and some others who were near enough to hear what she said, laugh heartily at her simplicity and ignorance of the place she was in.

Presently after, a gentleman crossing the room with his mask in his hand, was known to Alexis, who on sight of him cry'd out to Matilda,

Alexis. ‘Look yonder, my dear,—there is mr. Freeman ;—I never heard a syllable of his being in town ;—I will just step to him and tell him where we lodge ;—do you sit here ’till I come back.’

He then seated her on a bench, and went hastily after his friend, who had pass'd into another room ;—I now doubted not but that the Huntsman would snatch this opportunity of entertaining Matilda, but I lost sight of him in an instant ;—he vanish'd, as it were, from the place, and I saw him no more ;—the fair Shepherdess, however, was not to remain neglected,—I found several were advancing towards her, one of whom was the most grotesque, as well as disagreeable figure I ever beheld ;—his stature was far from what could be called tall ; but the circumference of his carcase exceeded that of any three men in the whole assembly ;—his legs look'd like the pillars of a church porch, and when he mov'd, were at such a distance from each other, that a boar of a moderate size might easily pass between them without being incommoded ;—he had on the habit of a Turkish Bashaw, which was the worst, indeed, he could have chose ;—his huge ears, discover'd by the shortness of his turban, hung upon his shoulders, as did the wallets under his chin upon his breast :—in a word, he could have no deformity that the dress he was in did not shew to advantage.

This enormous creature had no sooner reach'd the place where Matilda sat, than he threw himself

down

down by her on the bench, and accosted her with language which I should never forgive myself, nor expect to be forgiven by my reader, to repeat ;— but I was glad to find, by the whispers of some people behind me, that instead of a gentleman, as I at first took him for, he was no other than a Bully at a certain noted Brothel in Covent-Garden, and was known about town by the name of Lumper-Hammock. --- See, ladies, what company you expose yourselves to at a Musquerade ;--- those, however, who give tickets, and dress up such wretches to make a party among you, deserve little of your favour.

I cannot pretend to say whether this fellow was encouraged by any other person to behave to Matilda in the manner he did, merely to put her spirits into a hurry, or whether he was instigated to it only by his own impudence and brutality of nature ; but whatever it might be, the situation of that poor lady was greatly to be pitied ;---she mov'd by little and little as far from him as the bench would give her leave ; but he still follow'd, and would needs keep close to her and persecute her with his ribald discourse ;---sometimes she got up, and look'd round to see if her husband were coming to her relief ; then sat down again, not daring to leave the place for fear of missing him ; but all the time shew'd tokens of the utmost agitation of mind.

At length the blue Domine appear'd, on which she started from her seat, and running to him, cry'd, --- ' Oh, my dear, I am glad you are come.' --- He only reply'd, in a low voice,--- ' Ay, ay, --- ' let us be gone ;'---and taking her by the hand led her hastily away.

I pleas'd myself with the thoughts of having seen Matilda safe under the protection of her husband, and was equally so that he had discover'd little probation

probation of the Masquerade, by his leaving it at a time when the diversion was at its full height, and more company were coming in than going out.

But the satisfaction I enjoy'd in both these points vanish'd in a moment ;--- Alexis return'd,--- his mask was now off, and he pass'd directly to the place where he had left Matilda,--- then started back, --- confusion and surprise overspread his face ;--- he threw his eyes wildly round the room, then ran through every part of it, and without considering how much he exposed himself to the ridicule of that giggling assembly, ask'd first of one and then of another, if they had seen a Shepherdess in green and silver, and if they knew what was become of her.

This struck me with an infinite concern, as it made me know Matilda had been deceiv'd by the sight of the blue Domine, and in spite of my unwillingness to let him see I had come to a place where I had refused to accompany him, was just stepping forward to inform him of what had happen'd, when a lady hearing his enquiries spoke to him in these terms :

Lady. ‘ Sir, the lady I saw with you in the dress you mention, went away a little while ago with a gentleman in a blue Domine, much the same as your own.’

Alexis. ‘ Oh heavens ! — what curst mistake is this !’

In uttering this exclamation he flew out of the room like lightning, without staying to thank the lady for the intelligence she had given him ;--- I followed as fast as I could, in order to see what he would do, and found him at the door of the house, encompass'd with Hackney-Coachmen, Chairmen and Link-boys, among whom he was vainly endeavouring to get some account of his lost Shepherdess ;--- one of them, it seems, had said he saw a lady

lady in t
gentleme
ture of
drive.

It wil
band, a
Alexis
stance :-
Matilda
what pl
impossib
means o
nour, o
injury h
reflectio
self :--
the plac
crowd,
should p
for the
leaning

My l
of offe
not hav
dent th
I had c
tion in
flame i

I the
that nig
head, v
tations
opport
ver of a
my Be
my po
way to

lady in the habit he describ'd go into a coach with a gentleman, but could tell nothing either of the figure of the coach or where it was ordered to drive.

It will not be difficult for any one who is a husband, and who loves his wife, to judge of what Alexis must suffer in such a distracting circumstance :-- It was very evident to him that his dear Matilda had been carried off, but by whom, or to what place, were things which seem'd altogether impossible for him to discover ; and wanting the means either to prevent her ruin or his own dishonour, or to take vengeance on the ravisher for the injury he had done to both, could but fill him with reflections almost equally stabbing as the injury itself :-- finding no information could be gain'd in the place where he was, he withdrew from the crowd, as I suppose, to consider what method he should pursue ; for he continued in a fix'd posture for the space of two or three minutes at least, leaning against some rails before an adjacent house.

My heart bled for him, and if I had been capable of offering him either advice or consolation, would not have kept at the distance I did ; but the accident that had happen'd was without a remedy, and I had often observ'd, that to preach up moderation in the first gusts of passion serve but to inflame it more.

I thought there were no measures he could take that night, yet imagining he had something in his head, was desirous of seeing what event his cogitations would produce,--I therefore laid hold of the opportunity I now had of stepping behind the cover of a hackney-coach in waiting, and girded on my Belt of Invisibility, which I always carried in my pocket, in case any thing should fall in my way to give me occasion to make use of it.

The

The influence of my valuable gift had but just taken effect, by being warm upon my body, when Alexis rouz'd himself out of the resvery he had been in, and walk'd very fast up the street ;—I kept pace with him 'till he came to the house where he lodg'd ;—the door being open'd by his own footman, who sat up for him,—‘ Is my wife come home, cry'd he ?’—the fellow anfwering in the negative, and seeming somewhat surprised at the question, he threw himself into the parlour, saying to himself :

Alexis. ‘ How mad a hope did I entertain, that she might have found some means to escape the hands of her ravisher, and been here before me ?—No,—no,—’tis impossible ;—the villain doubtless will secure his prey :—eurs’d, curs’d Masquerade, invented by the fiends for the destruction of virtue.’

While he was thus speaking he tore off his Domine, with agonies not to be express’d, and stamp’d it under his feet ;—then turning to his servant went on thus :

Alexis. ‘ William, your mistress is run away with,—stolen from me by some villain in a Domine like my own ;—she is lost for ever unless immediately recover’d ;—fly this minute to every Tavern and Bagnio you can think on,—describe her habit,—enquire if such a one with a person in a blue Domine enter’d there ;—be gone this instant, while I run to a Justice of the Peace, and get a warrant to search in all suspected places.’

William. ‘ What part of the town, sir, do you think it most likely I shall hear of her ?’

Alexis. ‘ Alas I am as ignorant of that as you ;—but all parts must be search’d ;—fly then, good William ; and, do you hear, ask every Hackney-coachman you meet with if he set any such persons

sons do
‘ to con
‘ and m
The
reply ;
not very
upon ; a
same tim
Magistrat
would.

I had
man, on
success,
own apa
much m
poor Ma
the reaso
with the

Contains
certai
not r
nant i
humana

TH
ness of,
the ren
think it
ed to ta
sue, wo
da ; at
dishono
spair on
in en

‘ sons down, and where ;—away, I say,—stay not
‘ to consider,—a moment may confirm her ruin
‘ and my dishonour.’

The fellow obey’d without making any farther reply ; but, I perceiv’d by his countenance, was not very well contented with the errand he was sent upon ; and Alexis went out of the house at the same time he did, in order to have recourse to a Magistrate in this exigence, as he had said he would.

I had no inclination to follow either master or man, on an expedition which promis’d so little success, therefore made all the haste I could to my own apartment, very much fatigued in body, yet much more so in mind, at the unfortunate mistake poor Matilda had fallen into, and which I had all the reason in the world to fear would be attended with the most dreadful consequences.

C. H A P. II.

Contains the conclusion of a narrative, which I am certain there is one person in the world who cannot read without being fill’d with the most poignant remorse, unless he is as dead to all sense of humanity as of honour.

THE concern I was under, on account of the accident I had just come from being a witness of, would suffer me to enjoy but little repose the remaining part of that night ;—I could not think it practicable that the measures Alexis intended to take, or, indeed, any he could possibly pursue, would enable him to recover his dear Matilda ; at least 'till it was too late to save her from dishonour, and trembled for the effects which despair on such an event might probably occasion, both in en: and the other.

My

My impatience to know if Matilda was yet come home, or if the researches of Alexis had gain'd him any information concerning her, made me resolve to go to his lodgings in the morning ; but whether I should make this visit in my Visible or Invisible Capacity I was for some time at a loss ; —at last it seem'd most eligible to appear in *propria persona*, as if I came only to ask some questions concerning the Masquerade, and how they approv'd of that diversion, as it was the first time they partook of it ; and also to take no notice of my being apprized of any thing had happen'd there, unless he related it to me himself, which I did not much doubt of his doing.

On my knocking at the door it was open'd by mrs. Soberton, for so the gen'lewoman of the house was call'd ; —after a short apology for the trouble I had given her, I ask'd if Alexis or his lady were yet stirring ; to which, with a sorrowful countenance and tone of voice she reply'd :

Mrs. Soberton. ‘ Oh, sir, the strangest accident,—the saddest misfortune that ever was has happen'd ; ---I wish you had been here last night, or some good body, to comfort the poor gentleman ; for indeed I am afraid he will go beside himself.’

I affected a very great surprize on hearing this exclamation, and desir'd she would explain herself, if what she seem'd so full of was no secret ; ---she then made me this answer :

Mrs. Soberton. ‘ A secret ; ---no, sir, it can be no secret to all the town, much less to one so much a friend to the family as you are : ---be pleas'd to walk in and I will tell you all ; ---I mean, all that is in my power, for Heaven only knows what the end will be.’

In speaking these last words she threw the parlour door, which was then half shut, wide open to

giye

give me
in, and
gentleman
same hour
favourer
his discou

Mrs. S
oblig'd m
that Mat
rade ; —
straction
use of to
hitherto
vant had
with a t
ready or
close of
suppose
of her h
hour tog
of the f

I had
for my
man too

Old C

‘ deed,
‘ am he
‘ vexati

‘ by ma

Mrs.

‘ gentle
‘ gainst
‘ fault
‘ somet

‘ neral,

‘ not m

‘ be so

‘ in que

give me a more commodious entrance;—I went in, and there was sitting by the fire-side an old gentleman who lodg'd in the second floor of the same house;—he was a shrewd man, but no great favourer of the women, as I afterwards found by his discourse.

Mrs. Soberton had no sooner drawn a chair, and oblig'd me to be seated, than she began to tell me that Matilda had been carried off from the Masquerade;—that her husband was in the utmost distraction on missing her;—the means he had made use of to find where she was conceal'd; but that all hitherto had been ineffectual, tho' himself and servant had been half over the town in search of her, with a thousand particulars which I either knew already or could easily guess at; and added, at the close of her long detail, one circumstance which I suppose she thought very material,—that the door of her house had never been shut a quarter of an hour together for the whole night, and that none of the family could get a wink of sleep.

I had scarce time to express the trouble I was in for my friend's misfortune, when the old gentleman took up the word, and said,

Old Gentleman. ‘ It is a very ugly accident, indeed, which way soever it came about, and I am heartily sorry for Alexis;—but it shews what vexations men are liable to bring upon themselves by marrying with these gay fine young women.’

Mrs. Soberton. ‘ I protest you are the saddest gentleman I ever knew in my life,—always against the poor women,—as if we alone were in fault for every thing;—I know there are errors sometimes on both sides; but take it in the general, am very confident that if the men were not more to blame than we are, there would not be so many unhappy marriages:—as for the lady in question, my lodger, I believe there is not a

‘ sweeter,

• sweeter, better condition'd, and more modest
 • creature breathing, nor one that loves her husband more.'

I join'd mrs. Soberton with some warmth in the vindication of Matilda's character; and added, that I knew her incapable of being guilty of any thing to forfeit it;—to which the old gentleman reply'd:

Old Gentleman. ' It may be as you say,—her inclinations may be perfectly good and virtuous, —God forbid I should harbour any thoughts to the contrary;—but what busines had she at the Masquerade?—if women would stay at home, and mind their spinning and their needle, as in former days, none of these mischiefs would happen; but they must be gadding abroad, and provoking temptations they are not always able to resist.—One of our Poets, Otway I think it was, in my opinion, has a mighty pretty sentiment on this matter;—if I remember right his words are these:

Woman to man first as a blessing given,
 When innocence and love were in their prime:
 Happy a while in Paradise they lay;
 But quickly woman long'd to go astray;
 Some foolish new adventure needs must prove,
 And the first Devil she saw she chang'd her love.

I was too much of the same mind with this gentleman, as concerning Masquerades, to say any thing in the behalf of those entertainments; but urg'd in defence of Matilda's conduct in this point, that being a country lady, desirous of seeing every thing in London, and went with her husband, she could not be apprehensive of any kind of danger while under his protection.

He either was, or had complaisance enough to feign himself convinced by the arguments I offer'd; after

after w
 stepping
 ther his
 dow th
 —he sa
 and poli
 room er
 misfortu

Alexi

• I fear
 • of all
 • some
 • whom
 • men,
 • wretc

He th
 distracti
 the met
 lost trea
 and that
 to which
 ry'd, an
 tirely fr

Whil
 he ask'd
 which q
 his agon
 rage, an
 duce me
 in him.

Com
 the assist
 have ob
 vours to
 occasion
 kind, as
 to the p

after which I took my leave; but just as I was stepping out of the door I saw Alexis enter, or rather his ghost, for he appear'd more like the shadow than the real substance of my living friend; —he saluted me, however, with his usual freedom and politeness, and when we came into the dining-room embraced me, and began the recital of his misfortune in this pathetic exclamation:

Alexis. ‘ Oh, my friend, I am undone! —ruin'd, I fear, for ever! —the author, giver and partaker of all my happiness is lost! —torn from me by some lascivious, some inhuman villain; and him whom yesterday you beheld the most blest of men, you now see the most accurs'd, most wretched and forlorn of all created beings! ’

He then proceeded to inform me, as well as the distraction of his thoughts would give him leave, of the method he had taken for the recovery of his lost treasure; —how he had pass'd the whole night and that morning in search for her in every place to which he could imagine she might have been carry'd, and that hitherto all his enquiries had been entirely fruitless.

While he was speaking his servant came in, — he ask'd hastily if he had met with any success; to which question the fellow answering in the negative, his agonies redoubled, and never did despair, and rage, and grief, except in the case of suicide, produce more violent effects than what I now beheld in him.

Common compassion and good nature, without the assistance of that friendship I had for him, would have oblig'd me to make use of my utmost endeavours to asswage his sorrows; though, indeed, the occasion of his distress was of so nice and delicate a kind, as render'd it very difficult to say any thing to the purpose.

Perceiving

Perceiving he had no thoughts of giving over his unavailing rambles, 'till he had gain'd some intelligence concerning her, I told him, that, in my opinion, there was but little probability of benefiting himself by those means; that in an age which paid not much regard either to love or honour, he would only expose both himself and wife to the gagements of a sneering town, and perhaps also make the ravischer more careful to conceal his prize.

This seeming to have some weight with him, I added, that I believ'd I could point him out a way which afforded a greater prospect of success than the one he had determin'd to pursue;—on which he cry'd out to me to acquaint him with it.

I then advised him to put an advertisement in one of the Daily Papers, describing the shape and stature of Matilda as near as possible, with all the particulars of the habit she had on, and offering a handsome reward to any one who should give information of the place at which she alighted out of a Hackney-coach, in company with a gentleman in a blue Domine, between the hours of twelve and one at night:—“ This you may do, said I, without mentioning any name, except that of the person to whom such intelligence may be brought; —and 'tis very likely that either the Coachman who carry'd her, or some one who might be about the door where she was set down, or even the servants of the house will, for the sake of the gratuity, make that discovery which all your personal enquiries might not be able to obtain.”

I had no sooner ended than a sudden dawn of cheerfulness gleam'd upon his languid face, and to shew how much he approv'd of the thought I had communicated, took pen and paper and immediately wrote in almost the same terms I had express'd it; specifying, at the same time, a coffee-house where

where
intellig

To
was fe
that th
ply'd,
Alex

‘ labou
‘ wish
‘ cruel
‘ the P

To

He co
which
startin
the ext

Alex
‘ what
‘ nity
Find
to his
endeave
I could
bability
from t
rily ha
doubted
tempta
would
of brut

I en
the ex
rememb
fortune
and tur
their g

VOL

where the reward should be paid on the requested intelligence being brought.

To keep up his spirits, after the advertisement was sent to the printer, I repeated the hopes I had that the success would answer,—on which he reply'd,

Alexis. ‘ Yes, my dear friend, the suspense I labour under is so exquisite a torture, that I would wish to put an end to it, though by the most cruel, the most stabbing certainty,—according to the Poet's axiom, that in all misfortunes

‘ To know the worst is some degree of ease.

He could not utter these last words without a sigh which seem'd to rend his very heart-strings;—then starting suddenly from his seat he cry'd out with the extremest vehemence,

Alexis. ‘ Oh, Matilda!—my poor Matilda!—what would I not give to purchase an opportunity of revenging thy sad undoing!

Finding now that he was beginning to relapse into his former agonies, I made use of my utmost endeavours to bring him to believe what, indeed, I could not believe myself,—that there was a probability that his wife might in reality suffer no more from this adventure than the fright it must necessarily have put her into; and that as it could not be doubted but that her virtue would resist all the temptations could be offer'd, so the same virtue would also enable her to triumph over the attacks of brutal violence.

I enforced what I said upon this scorce with all the examples I had ever read of, or at least could remember, in relation to ladies who had the good fortune to make converts of their intended ravishers, and turn what was meant for their dishonour into their glory; and was at length so far successful in

this attempt, as to inspire him with a half hope that his dear Matilda might possibly return unviolated.

Having gain'd this point, I prevail'd on him to take some refreshment, which he could not but stand in great need of, as he had neither eat, nor drank, nor slept in so many hours;—at his earnest request I staid with him, and partook what might be more properly call'd a running banquet than a dinner, though, by mrs. Soberton's directions, elegantly enough prepar'd:—after this, nature, who will not be denied her rites, whatever vexations may intervene to rob her of them, spread a certain drowsiness upon his eye-lids, which I perceiving persuaded him to favour, and on my promising him to come again the same evening, or the next morning without fail, he lay down on the bed, and left me at liberty to pursue my inclinations.

As I had now no engagement upon my hands, and had not been at White's Chocolate-house for a considerable time, it was now my full design to go thither, and see what the company were doing; but as I had some very good reasons not to appear in that place, I stepp'd into the first nook I found in my way, and put on my Belt of Invisibility.

I was but just equipp'd, and passing on to my intended rout, when I saw a chair, with the curtains close drawn, stop at a few paces before me;—I should have taken no notice of this, if one of the fellows had not lifted up the top, and told the person in it, that he had forgot whether it were the Red or the Green Lamps;—the answer was given in a voice which I presently knew to be Matilda's; and if I had not so well remember'd, as I did, the accents, I should have suspected it was no other than herself, by her saying,—‘ The Two Green Lamps.’

On finding it was she, the reader will easily believe I had more curiosity to see the interview between

between her and Alexis, than any thing else I could have in my head ;—I follow'd the chair 'till it came to the house, and on the door being open'd slipp'd in with it ;—on her alighting mrs. Soberton ran out of the parlour, and was beginning to testify her joy at her return, tho' mingled with some demonstrations of surprise to see her in the condition she was, which, indeed, was deplorable enough ;—her head without any other covering than a handkerchief tied carelessly over her dishevell'd hair,—her garments torn,—her eyes swell'd with tears,—every feature distorted, and all the tokens of distraction and despair about her.

She made no answer to what the good gentleman said, but, after throwing some money to the chairmen, ran hastily up stairs into the dining-room, where flinging herself on a settee,—she cry'd out, —‘ Where is Alexis ?’—to which mrs. Soberton, who had follow'd as well as myself, reply'd,—‘ Oh, madam, you cannot imagine what trouble both he and all of us have had on your account.’

I know not whether that unhappy lady would have declared to mrs. Soberton any part of what had befallen her or not; for Alexis, who either had not fallen asleep, or was easily awak'd, heard his wife's voice and came flying out of the chamber that instant ;—mrs. Soberton, discreetly judging that they might not chuse to have a third person witness of their discourse, went directly down stairs ; but the Invisible remain'd, and his wonderful Tablets receiv'd the impression of the following dialogue between them :

Matilda. ‘ Oh, Alexis, wherefore did you leave me ?

Alexis. ‘ Wherefore did you leave the place where I desir'd you should wait for my return ?’

Matilda. ‘ I stirr'd not from it but to follow you, as I then thought.’

Alexis. ‘ Confusion!—How could you be so mistaken?’

Matilda. ‘ Alas I had no apprehension of the deception put upon me!—his habit was exactly like yours;—his stature much the same;—he spoke in a low voice; but if he had not, my spirits were in too much agitation at the impudence of a fellow who had just before accosted me, to have distinguish’d the difference.’

Alexis. ‘ Oh, my torn heart!—But say,—who is the villain that betray’d you!—Where were you carry’d?’

Matilda. ‘ Alas,—the precautions he took has left me ignorant of both; and all I know is that I am undone.’

Alexis. ‘ Distraction!—undone, and not know by whom! nor even in what place the horrid deed was perpetrated!—all means for my revenge barr’d up!—Yet perhaps I may be able to discover something,—speak therefore,—tell me in an instant all the particulars of the story!’

Matilda. ‘ I will, tho’ every word I utter will stab me to the soul, and inflict anew the shocks I have undergone.’

Alexis. ‘ No preparations;—be quick, and answer my demand at once.’

Matilda. ‘ Have patience then; for while you look so terrible I cannot speak.’

Alexis. ‘ You cannot think I would hurt you;—speak then, thou wretched woman, and break at once the heart of thy more wretched husband!’

Matilda. ‘ Oh which way shall I begin!—how end?’

Alexis. ‘ Keep me not on the rack!’

Matilda. ‘ Soon as I saw the counterfeit Alexis approach I rose to meet him, and on his bidding me come and stretching forth his hand I gave him mine, glad to find myself conducted from him

that mingled crowd which I had seen too much of to desire to continue any longer with ;—we went into a coach where I began to tell him how I had been affronted by an ugly huge man in a Turkish habit ; but he made no answer either to that or any other idle prate I entertain'd him with, 'till the coach stopp'd and he handed me into a house, the entry of which was full of men, who were running backwards and forwards with candles in their hands, and seem'd very busy :—I ask'd where we were going, — he still made no reply ; but after a short whisper to one of the fellows led me up stairs.'

Alexis. ' 'Sdeath !—why did you go !—
' then was your time to have cry'd out for rescue !'

Matilda. ' What, from my husband !—I could not as yet know him from any other than yourself :—I was, indeed, a little surprised at this behaviour ; but imagined it was owing to some little whim you had taken into your head, on purpose to laugh at my simplicity.—Being warm with having my mask on so long, I pluck'd it off as soon as we got into the room, but he clapp'd it on again ;—a man was then just entering with a bottle and glasses in his hand, which having set down on a table he immediately withdrew ; — my conductor then bolted the door, and running towards me, said,—“ Now, my angel, I may feast my eye with all that heaven of beauty, which, while beneath a cloud, attracted my admiration, and you behold the man who from this happy moment devotes himself entirely to your charms ;”— with these words he took off both mine and his own vizard ; — I shriek'd, and surely had fainted with the fright, if an equal proportion of rage had not kept up my spirits.'

What said he then? **G 3** **Mildred.**

Matilda. ‘ A thousand romantic lies,—such as
 ‘ I have read in Plays and Novels, which I an-
 ‘ swer’d only with revilings, till perceiving my
 ‘ just scorn had no effect upon him I had recourse to
 ‘ tears and entreaties ;—told him I was a married
 ‘ woman,—that I had a husband dearer to me
 ‘ than my soul, and by whom I was as much
 ‘ belov’d, and conjur’d him not to detain me nor
 ‘ attempt to violate the sacred rites of marriage.’

‘ *Alexis.* ‘ Did not this move him ?

Matilda. ‘ Oh no,—not in the least, the au-
 ‘ dacious wretch but laugh’d at this remonstrance,
 ‘ ---said that love, like all other appetites, demand-
 ‘ ed variety ;—that I was a fool, and knew not
 ‘ the true interest of my sex, but that he would in-
 ‘ struct me better, and make me happy tho’ against
 ‘ my will.’

‘ *Alexis.* ‘ Execrable Dog !—but go on.’

Matilda. ‘ You may easily believe, that he
 ‘ who could speak such words would also accom-
 ‘ pany them with actions of the same nature :—I
 ‘ resisted all I could the indecent liberties he took,
 ‘ —call’d Heaven and Earth to my assistance, but
 ‘ in vain :—I was at last overpow’r’d :—in the
 ‘ midst of tears, reproaches, swoonings, he ef-
 ‘ fected his brutal purpose, and made me the most
 ‘ miserable of women.’

‘ *Alexis.* ‘ Most miserable, indeed ! — After
 ‘ this, I suppose, he would have suffer’d you to
 ‘ depart ?’

Matilda. ‘ Can you think me vile enough to
 ‘ continue one moment in the presence of that de-
 ‘ testable monster, when I was at liberty to leave
 ‘ him !—This, indeed is cruel.—Oh Alexis !—I
 ‘ hate myself for what I have been compell’d to
 ‘ suffer,—do not you hate me too ?’

‘ *Alexis.* ‘ No, Matilda, I never can hate you ;
 ‘ —but all the hopes of my eternal peace de-
 ‘ pend

‘ pend on a perfect knowledge of every circumstance.’

Matilda. ‘ His first pretence of detaining me was to persuade me to moderation : for in those dreadful moments, had the means of death been in my power, I certainly should have committed some desperate deed, either on myself or him : —he feign’d a contrition for following, as he said, the dictates of an ungovern’d passion, and forcing from me a blessing which ought to have been the reward only of long and faithful services ; —but soon I found that all these flatteries, this counterfeited softness had no other aim than to make me as wicked as he had made me wretched, and seduce me to consent to aid his brutal pleasures.’

Alexis. ‘ Could he have the vanity to imagine you believ’d him?’

Matilda. ‘ All my spirits had been before exhausted ; —I had no voice, no breath to speak ; and he, perhaps, interpreted my silence as a half yielding to his will : —he could not well discern how much my looks disdain’d his suit ; for tho’ it was mid-day, no other light came into the room than what beam’d through two small holes in the window-shutters ; —he seem’d very alert, —threw open the windows, —unfasten’d the door, and order’d that something should be got ready to eat ; but when the waiter came in to spread the table, he oblig’d me to put on my mask, saying, —“ You see, my dear, how careful I am of your reputation, —I hope you will reward me for it.”

Alexis. ‘ The lowest hell reward him ! —So then you dined together ?

Matilda. ‘ Such an attempt would sure have choak’d me ; overcome, indeed, with this saintness, I swallowed a little wine mingled with

water ; but though he forced me to sit by him at the table, I neither could nor would partake of any thing was there ; -- my refusal, however, nor the sight of my distraction, damp'd not his appetite, he both eat and drank heartily, and having finish'd his repast, pull'd me on his knee and said, --- " By heaven, in spite of all your peevish obstinacy I like you above all the women in the world, and if you will leave your husband and consent to be my mistress, I have the power as well as inclination to support you in a fashion equal to that you live in with the man you are married to, be he of what rank soever." — I reply'd, with all the resolution I could muster up, that I despis'd his offers as much as I hated himself, and would receive no favours from him but the means of returning to my dear injur'd husband ; -- on this he paus'd, but still held me fast, and looking earnestly on my face at last spoke thus : --- " Well then, since it is so, and we must part, let us part at least as lovers should do, and if I never must hope to see you more, should be a fool not to make the most I can of the present opportunity," --- with these words he bore me to the bed, and, --- oh, Alexis ! how shall I repeat it ! --- triumph'd a second time over the feeble resistance I then had strength to make ; --- he afterwards used no arguments to win me to forgiveness, but perceiving the day was near closed in, said to me, with a kind of sneer, --- Madam, you shall be obey'd, --- shall go home to the husband you are so fond on ; " and then rung the bell for the waiter to call a coach ; and when told there was one at the door, tied a handkerchief cross my eyes, I suppose, to prevent my having any knowledge of that scene of my undoing ; -- he led me down stairs, put me into the coach, and came in himself, but spoke little 'till

‘ ‘till we stopp’d at a place which I think I have
heard you say they call Covent Garden, there
set me down, and bid the coachman drive back
to the place where we came from as fast as he
could,---I pluck’d the handkerchief off my eyes
and threw it over my head, my cap and hat be-
ing lost in the fruitless struggles I had made ;---
there were several chairs, I stepp’d into the near-
est to me, and was brought home in the deplor-
able situation you now see me.’

Alexis. ‘ Oh ’tis too much for man to bear !
---Yet one thing more, Matilda, --- describe, as
near as possible, the features and complexion
of this inhuman ravisher.’

Matilda. ‘ Alas, the horror I was in from the
first moment I found myself in the power of a
stranger hinder’d me from taking any great notice;
---all I can say is, that he had dark eyes, a clear
and ruddy skin, and though his behaviour ren-
der’d him odious to me, with others I believe he
may pass for handsome.’

Alexis. ‘ Young I suppose.’

Matilda. ‘ About five or six and twenty, as
far as I can judge.’

Alexis. ‘ Had he the appearance of a man of
rank and fortune ?’

Matilda. ‘ Every thing I saw about him,
which properly belong’d to himself, bespoke
him such ;---but doubly disguised.—Did you not
take notice of an Huntsman at the Masquerade ?’

Alexis. ‘ Yes, and remember he always kept
pretty near to us.—Was he the ravisher ?’

Matilda. ‘ The same ;---he told me that he
had his eye upon me from the first moment I
came in, and when he saw you left me, ran
and procur’d a Domine as like to yours as he
could get, in hopes I might be, as alas I really
was, deceived by that fatal habit.’

Alexis. ‘ ‘Tis well ;—I may perhaps hunt
‘ him.’

The eyes of Alexis seem’d to flash fire while
he utter’d these words ;—after which he stood mu-
sing for some time,—then turning to his wife, who
still sat weeping in the same posture she had thrown
herself into at her entrance, spoke thus to her :

Alexis. ‘ Rise, Matilda, retire to your cham-
‘ ber and endeavour to compose yourself to rest.’

Matilda. ‘ What so early ?’—‘tis not yet six
‘ o’clock.’

Alexis. ‘ No matter,—your condition requires
‘ it,—you have wak’d too long,—therefore pray
‘ go.’

Matilda. ‘ Will you come too ?’

Alexis. ‘ Do not expect me,—I have much to
‘ think upon and must be alone.’

Matilda. ‘ Oh, Alexis !—‘tis as I fear’d, I
‘ am now grown loathsome in your sight.’

Alexis. ‘ No, no,—not so ; but there is a fer-
‘ mentation in my mind which must have time to
‘ settle,—to-morrow I may be more at ease ;—I
‘ pray you then to give me liberty this night.’

Matilda. ‘ Well, you shall be obey’d.’

With this she took a candle and withdrew ; but
with a look and gesture so truly pity-moving, that
if a painter had been to draw the picture of Despair
he could not have copy’d from an original more
striking.

He then call’d for mrs. Soberton, told her his
wife had been very much frighted, and was indis-
posed, so begg’d she would assist her in any thing
she might happen to stand in need of, and also that
she would order a bed to be got ready for him in
another chamber ;—she reply’d, with a great
many low curtseys, that she would take care his
commands should be obey’d, and that she should

think

think nothing in her power too much to serve the good lady.

She said no more, but went out of the room, I suppose, to do what he requested of her;—I was about to follow her, but seeing Alexis put on his wig, which he had pluck'd off when he went to lie down, thought he was going on some expedition which might be worth my taking the pains to explore;—to this end I slipp'd down stairs while he was taking up his sword and hat,—got out of the house before him,—divested myself of my Belt,—became visible, and met him some few paces distant.

I told him I was returning to his lodgings according to my promise, and affected some surprise at seeing him abroad;—he seem'd pleas'd that he had not miss'd me, and repeated, in a few words, the sum of what I have been relating; adding, that he now flatter'd himself with being able to trace out the person who had injur'd him, by the description Matilda had given of him, and then intreated I would be so good as to accompany him in the search he was about to make;—to which request I readily consented.

I found his scheme was, to enquire among those people who let out dresses for the Masquerade, if any account could be given of a gentleman who the night before had hir'd first the habit of a Huntsman, and afterwards a blue Domine:—the thing, indeed, seem'd feasible enough in itself, though it did not answ'r expectation.—We went to several shops without receiving the least information; and all we could at last obtain was, that a gentleman, habited like a Huntsman, had come in a very great hurry for a blue Domine, which had not been return'd 'till about half an hour before our coming;—but the name or quality of the person who hired

blooded or red hair to be yedo so blooded abasmal, a
dams

it, the woman protested to us she knew nothing of. Alexis then demanded, somewhat hastily, who it was had brought it back:—she smil'd both at this interrogatory and the manner in which it was made, and reply'd, that she was talking to customers at that time in the shop; but if she had been less engag'd she should scarce have taken any notice;—‘ For, said she, provided we have our goods again, and are paid for the use of them, it is not our business to examine any farther.’

Here ended the fruitless search of Alexis;—he had now no shadow of hope for discovering the ravisher but in the advertisement I had persuaded him to get inserted in the News Papers, and his despair became so outragious that it was with much difficulty I prevailed upon him to go home.

I went with him, fearing if he was left alone in the street he might be guilty of some extravagancy;—it was one of the most fine frosty nights I had ever seen, and while we were knocking at the door he look'd up towards the sky, and, with a voice denoting the extremest bitterness of heart, burst into this exclamation:

Alexis. ‘ How many thousand twinkling stars are there, yet not one among them all a friend to me or poor undone Matilda! ’

I went in with him to the chamber mrs. Soerton had caused to be provided for him, nor would leave him 'till I had seen him in bed;—after which I gave William a caution not to go to sleep, but keep near his master and be attentive to all his motions, in order to prevent any fatal effect of the present distraction of his mind.

I shall not trouble the reader with any account of the anxiety I was in at the condition in which I had left this worthy, though ill-fated pair;—I shall only say, it was such as made me quit my bed

bed very early the next morning, with a resolution to exert my utmost endeavours for the mitigation of their sorrows, and, if possible, to reconcile Alexis to a misfortune which was without a remedy; but, unluckily for my design, a person came to speak with me the moment I was going out;—the business which had brought him very nearly concern'd me, and some papers which I was oblig'd to look over detain'd me 'till almost twelve o'clock.

On my arrival at the place where I so much wish'd to be, I found Alexis just come in before me:—he appear'd with a countenance much more compos'd than the night before, but very pensive and melancholy;—he presently acquainted me, however, with the occasion of his having been abroad:—it was this:

He told me he had pass'd the whole night in considering how he should act in relation to Matilda, and finding it a thing inconsistent with his honour to suffer her to remain in town after what had happen'd, he resolved to send her immediately into the country, and was just return'd from hiring a Post-chaise for that purpose;—the reason he gave for his proceeding in this manner was as follows:

Alexis. ‘She cannot remain here and be shut up, she must appear sometimes;—and who can tell but that in some unlucky minute she may be seen by the very villain who has ruin'd her, and who, either through curiosity or the desire of renewing the gratification of his vicious flame, may discover whose wife she is, and wherever he sees me point me to his lewd companions for the wretch he has made me?’

I had nothing to offer in opposition to what he said on this score; for, indeed, I thought it very proper that they should both retire into the country;—so reply'd, that I was glad I had called that morning

morning, otherwise I should not have had the opportunity of wishing them a good journey ;—to which he hastily rejoin'd,—‘ I shall not go ?’
 ‘ How ! cry'd I, somewhat surprised, do you send away Matilda and stay behind yourself ?’
 A deep sigh was the first answer he gave ; but the testimony of his discontent was presently succeeded by these words :

Alexis. ‘ Yes, my friend,—she must go with-out me ;—two days ago nothing was so precious to me as her presence ;—I liv'd, indeed, but in her sight ;—every glance,—every look she gave shot pleasure to my heart ;—but now, alas ! those happy moments are for ever fled, and I can regard her as no other than the ruin'd reliques of the woman once so dear to me.’

It was in vain I represented to him, that as I doubted not but he was perfectly convinced of the purity of Matilda's mind, he ought not to love her less for the violence her person had sustain'd :—he own'd the justness of my reasons, but could not prevail on himself to be govern'd by them ; and when I urg'd the cruelty of sending her so long a journey without any companion to alleviate her sorrows, he made me this reply :

Alexis. ‘ She does not go alone,—her waiting-maid, who soon after our arrival in town was oblig'd to be remov'd on account of the small-pox, is now quite recover'd, and came home last night ;—this girl has attended Matilda for some years, and I know will be very careful of her.’

While we were discoursing the chaise came to the door, on which Alexis call'd to have the luggage put in, and his wife to make herself ready :—I ask'd him if he thought it proper I should take my leave of Matilda before her departure ;—he reply'd, that it was a ceremony which he believ'd she would

would gladly be dispensed with from receiving, in her present unhappy situation; --- but begg'd I would stay in the dining-room 'till he had dispatch'd this disagreeable affair.

With these words he went out of the room, and I remain'd where I was; --- in less than half a quarter of an hour, looking thro' the window, I saw the disconsolate Matilda go out of the house, supported on one side by Alexis, and on the other by her attendant; --- I could not see her face, but her motions, and the distracted air with which she threw herself into the chaise, were enough to convince me of the extreme wretchedness of her condition.

Alexis return'd to me in a situation little less pity-moving, yet could not my heart altogether absolve him for this last part of his behaviour towards Matilda; --- it was now, however, a time to apply rather balms than corrosives to his bleeding and despairing mind; I therefore said every thing in my power which I thought might administer consolation to him; but all my endeavours that way were unsuccessful, and though I staid with him the greatest part of the day, had the mortification to leave him as I found him.

Oh! had the dark unknown beheld the sad effects his wild inordinate desires produced, he surely could not have sustain'd the shock, but must have reveng'd upon himself the mischiefs he had brought upon two worthy persons so lately bless'd, so truly loving and beloved.

know abouſt (item his diſciplinary work) &c
 &c & nation for punishment and in beſtoſed or exil
 excoſed b'fore cor'ſe or ph'ſe whom now is in
C H A P. III.
Confefsſ of ſome farther particulars relative to the
preceding adventure, which came to the Author's
knowledge after the departure of Matilda from
London; with two letters wrote by that unfor-
tunate lady to her husband in her exile, which it
is hoped will not be an unwelcome preſent to the
Public, eſpecially to thoſe who have hearts not
utterly incapable of being affected with the woes
of others.

I Am very much afraid that Alexis will stand but little justified in the opinion of my fair readers for his conduct towards Matilda; — they will doubtless say, that the love he pretended to have for her had taken but a ſhallow root in his heart, when it could be shaken by a misfortune which ſhe had no way contributed to bring upon herſelf.

They will, perhaps, also add, that after ſhe had with ſo much ſimplicity, ſome may think folly too, revealed to him the whole of what had befallen her, it was not only unkind, but highly ungenerous and cruel in him to abandon her to despair at a time when ſhe had ſo much need of the tenderest compassion and conſolation.

I muſt confeſſ, indeed, that theſe accusations have the ſtrongeſt appearance of reaſon on their ſide; yet I muſt take upon me, notwithstanding, to aver, that Alexis in this point was influenced by a principle which is among the things, which tho' we cannot prove to be ſo, yet we know in fact are ſo; and how much a paradox ſoever it may ſeem to ſome, Love, when in excess, may, on more occasions than one, produce the ſame effects as Hate.

I know

I know not whether there are many ladies would like to be loved in this manner; for certain it is, that it was chiefly owing to the too refin'd delicacy of the passion Alexis was posses'd of for Matilda that made them both so greatly wretched; — the thoughts that another, though by force, had revell'd in her charms, depriv'd those charms of all their relish, and sicken'd every wish.

When we have been talking together on this head, often have I heard him, in the utmost bitterness of heart, express himself in these terms:

Alexis. ‘ I still adore her mind; — I know it all compos'd of sweetness, innocence, and heavenly truth; — but, oh! the blemish cast upon her person cannot be wash'd off but with the villain's blood; and unless fate allows me the means of doing her and myself that justice, can never look upon her but as the ghost of my once dear wife.’

Finding that to prevail on him to live with Matilda as a wife was a thing utterly impracticable, at least 'till time had a little mellow'd the asperity of his resentment, I forbore any farther speech on that head, believing that if a change in Matilda's favour should ever happen it must come wholly of himself, and not by the arguments of another.

It will be easy for the reader to judge of how little efficacy the persuasions of any friend could be to move him, when those of the tender, the endearing, the so lately ador'd Matilda prov'd in vain, which abundantly appear by the many letters she sent to him after her banishment, two only of which I got an opportunity of transcribing, and here present them to the public as a specimen of the rest.

The first was wrote immediately on her arrival at their country seat, and contain'd these lines:

word

To

To ALEXIS.

My dear, dear ALEXIS,

“ I Am a sufficient proof that grief is not so fatal
 “ as some people would represent it, since I live
 “ to tell you I am safely arriv'd at *****;
 “ —yes,—I am return'd to that once blissful scene
 “ of soft delights,—of pure and virtuous love;
 “ but, oh ! that heaven is fled, a sad reverse sup-
 “ plies its place, and wheresoever I turn my eyes,
 “ horrors instead of joys rise to my distracted view !

“ I remember that when you turn'd me from
 “ you, your last words to me were,—be comfort-
 “ ed, Matilda. — Alas ! you full well know, that
 “ without Alexis there is no comfort for Matilda ;
 “ —your presence is the only balsam can assuage
 “ the tortures of my poor burning, bleeding, a-
 “ gonizing heart ! — if then, indeed, you wish me
 “ less the wretch I am, let me not linger long
 “ in a banishment more cruel than death ! — quit
 “ that detested town, — fly to my relief, and at
 “ least join with me in bewailing what is past a
 “ remedy.

“ But, oh ! — I have too much cause to fear you
 “ have totally withdrawn all your affection from
 “ me, and am doubly miserable in a consciousness
 “ of being now render'd unworthy to retain it ! —
 “ yet had sickness, or any other accident, depriv-
 “ ed me of that little beauty nature has bestow'd
 “ upon me, and made me become lame, or blind,
 “ or crooked, I flatter myself you would have
 “ lov'd me still ; — you would then have pitied and
 “ cherish'd me in your bosom ; — and sure the mis-
 “ fortune that has befallen me was as far remov'd
 “ from my seeking as any of those I have men-
 “ tion'd could possibly be.

“ I will

“ I will not, however, anticipate the doom I so
“ much dread, — will not give way to apprehen-
“ sions distracting to myself, and, I hope, in-
“ jurious to you ; — I know you are generous and
“ just, and will endeavour to assure myself those
“ noble principles, even without the aid of ten-
“ derness, will not permit you to hate me, to
“ throw me off for ever, for my person having
“ sustain’d a violence, to which I am persuaded
“ you are convinced my mind was incapable of
“ consenting : — I will believe that you feel all my
“ woes, participate in my anguish, and that my
“ pen ought rather to flow with words of consola-
“ tion than reproach.

“ Yet if it is ordain’d that we must both be
“ wretched, let us be wretched together ; — let us
“ mingle our tears and interchangeably echo back
“ each others sighs ; — let us indulge despair, —
“ recal the memory of those blissful hours we once
“ enjoy’d, — compare the present with the past,
“ and join in curses on the base, the inhuman au-
“ thor of our mutual woes !

“ But whether does my inconsiderate passion lead
“ me ! — does it become the love, the tenderness,
“ the duty of a wife, to wish you should partake
“ my ruin ! — no, since I can no longer contribute
“ to your happiness, rather forget, renounce, a-
“ bandon me for ever ! — Yet, oh ! 'tis hard ; —
“ my brain grows wild on the reflection : — I can
“ proceed no farther. — Pity me, my most dear,
“ my most ador’d Alexis ! pity, — oh pity,
“ The undone, “ the lost MATILDA.”

“ P. S. If these distracting lines have any power
“ to move your soul ! — if any remains of soft com-
“ passion

“ passion towards me still dwell within your breast,
 “ write to me by the first post! — fix, I beseech
 “ my uncertain fate! — oh that I should dare to
 “ stand in need of entreaties to hear from you!”

When Alexis shew'd me the above, he seem'd all dissolv'd in a flood of love and tenderness; yet I believe the answer he sent to it was dictated in terms not altogether so satisfactory to Matilda as the present disturbance of her mind requir'd.

Here follows the second melancholy epistle of that unfortunate lady.

To ALEXIS.

“ My for ever dear tho' much unkind ALEXIS;
 “ **W**ITH what anxiety have I watched the arrival of the post! — how counted the tedious minutes as they glided on! — how trembled between hope and fear on every knock was given at the gate, while in expectation of a letter from you! — at last it came; — but, oh! I am not more at ease!

“ Wherefore, Alexis, do you keep me in this cruel suspence! — I ask'd no impossibilities of you, — desir'd you not to love me still, — I only begg'd the decision of my fate; and sure that is not a request too much for me to make, or you to grant!

“ My father, uncles, all my kindred and acquaintance, nay, our very servants, stand amaz'd to see me here without you; — they perceive my alter'd looks, and with officious love enquire into the cause: — all the answer I can make, is, — that the air of London not agreeing with my constitution, I hurry'd back before some busines you had in town would permit you to return.

“ These

These excuses may pass current for a time,
but cannot do so long: --- I conjure you therefore,
by all you have to hope, or fear, or wish,
not to expose yourself and me to conjectures
which cannot be to the advantage of either of
our characters; --- pronounce my doom, --- say
that you will return, and live with me, in all
appearance, as before; or scruple not to let me
know you have resolved on an eternal separation,
that I may retire at once to some dark corner of
the world, and shut myself up from pity and
contempt.

I know this ought to have been thought upon
before you obliged me to remove from London;
but both of us were in too much confusion at the
time of parting to give our cooler reason any
room to operate; --- we have since, however, had
leisure to reflect on what was proper to be done
in our unhappy circumstances; and I flatter myself
you will not think me too presuming in being the first to mention it.

Oh, Alexis! imagine not that when I urge
you to this ecclarcisement, that I am so vain as
to sooth my fond heart with a belief that since
the dreadful accident has happen'd to me you
ever can love me as you have done; --- no, I
rather expect my sentence will be that of an e-
verlasting banishment; --- perhaps it is already
sign'd within your breast, and the compassion you
have for me alone delays the execution.

If this should be the case, --- throw aside that
cruel mercy which conceals it from me, I beseech you; --- grief and despair have given me
fortitude to bear the worst of ills, and sure
there can be none half so dreadful to me as seeing you no more; --- so much the better for my
eternal peace, as it will the sooner rid me of
the

“ the burthen of a hated life ; --- but I will trouble you no more than to renew my petition of knowing in your next letter what it is you have in effect decreed for

“ The innocently criminal

MATILDA.

“ P. S. Your old acquaintance and fellow-colleague, Mr. L——, has just now sent to enquire when you are expected down ; --- he designs, it seems, to set up at the next General Election for the Borough of *****, and greatly depends on the interest he knows you have in that place, --- I suppose you will shortly receive a letter from himself on the occasion ; --- oh may the calls of friendship give weight to those I have mention'd, and influence you to return.”

I happen'd to be with Alexis at the time of his receiving this ; --- he first read it to himself, --- then communicated it to me, and when he had finish'd cry'd out with an extraordinary emotion,

Alexis. “ Poor Matilda ! --- unhappy charming woman ! --- with what enchanting eloquence does she plead against herself ! --- how sweetly labour to oppose what she most wishes to obtain.”

As I found the strongest reason in the arguments urg'd in Matilda's letter, I must confess that I was at a loss to comprehend what he meant by speaking in this manner, therefore desir'd he would explain himself, which he immediately did in these terms :

Alexis. “ O, friend, the more I discover of her merit, the less I am able to forget the violation of her honour ; --- I must cease to love her as I do, --- must bring myself to look upon her with the same indifference that most husbands do upon

“ their

their wives, before I can support, with any tolerable degree of patience, the thoughts that another has posses'd her.'

Thus did he always talk whenever we were alone together, and any mention of his wife came upon the carpet, as it seldom fail'd to do on some occasion or other ; --- had Matilda known his sentiments, I believe it would be a moot point whether she would not rather have chose a separation than to live with him, after he had reduced himself to such a state of insensibility.

He now, indeed, began to give great indications that he had nothing more at heart than to lose all remembrance, not only of the injury done to Matilda, but of herself also ; --- by very swift degrees he became the reverse of what he was before his going to that fatal Masquerade ; --- the pleasures of the bottle, and the conversation of the looser part of woman-kind, divide too much of his time between them, and he seeks in riots and debaucheries his relief from melancholy.

I am told, however, that he is at present preparing to set out for ***** ; but what satisfaction can the virtuous Matilda receive from his return thus transform'd, — thus debased in morals and behaviour from the man she had so dearly loved, and who was once so worthy her esteem ?

How sad a reverse has a few weeks made in the condition of this lately happy pair ! --- surely the wretch, for so I must call him, be he of what degree or rank soever, who for the sake of gratifying the fleeting pleasure of a moment has brought this ruin on them, ought never to be forgiven in this world, whatever a sincere contrition, if he is capable of it, may entitle him to in the next.

C H A P. IV.

The Author having found something in his rambles, which he supposes may be of some value to the right owner, to shew his readiness to restore it, condescends to take upon himself the office of a Town-Cryer; — but waves the ceremony of the great O-Yes three times repeated.

HAppening one morning to wake more early than ordinary, I quitted my bed, and the weather being fine, and my humour more inclined to seriousness than gaiety, I took a little promenade, not with the least design or expectation of making any discovery of other people's affairs, but merely to think of my own with more liberty than I could do at home. — I met no living creature in my way except some few birds that perch'd upon the twigs of the yet leafless trees, and in melodious notes chanted forth praises to the approaching spring; — these rather indulging than confounding meditation, I pass'd slowly on by the side of the Serpentine-River, where, as I was bury'd in reflection on things which the reader has no business to be acquainted with, my eyes were attracted with the sight of a white fatten pocket lying just before me, — I suppose it might have been dropp'd from some lady's side the night before; for on my taking it up I found it extremely damp with the dew which always falls in absence of the sun.

I look'd upon this as a lawful prize, and that I had a^right to keep it; at least 'till I could find somebody that had a better title; — I therefore tied it up in my handkerchief, and after having finish'd my walk took it home with me, where my impatience did not suffer me to continue long without examining

amining
invento
in pett
by any

More
give the
which
shilling
Duke o
by som
pression

Havi
fully ba
and the

The
small
scribe,
veral m
the wo
demand

The
full of
rimm'd
the insi

But
accordi
Bank-
serving
make
under
having
in the
were d

amining what it contain'd; — I shall give a faithful inventory of all the particulars, reserving only one in petto, in order to prevent being imposed upon by any fictitious claimant.

Money being the chief idol of mankind, I shall give that the preference, and begin with the Purse, which had in it five gold ducats, a leaden French shilling, a bent half-crown, and a medal of the Duke of Cumberland in copper, very curious, but by some accident had been crack'd, and the impression in several parts pretty much erased.

Having look'd over these pieces, I put them carefully back into the Purse whence I had taken them, and then proceeded to a farther scrutiny.

The next thing that presented itself was a very small Pocket-book, which I shall forbear to describe, as well as to make any mention of the several memorandums it contain'd, to any person in the world but to the lady who wrote and shall come demand them.

There was also a chrystral Smelling-bottle half full of Sal Armoniac, a tortoise-shell Snuff-box rimm'd with gold, and a naked Venus painted on the inside.

But the most valuable part of this cargo, at least according to my opinion, was some papers, — not Bank-Bills, — but letters and other writings more deserving the attention of the public, and which I shall make no scruple to insert, as they gradually fell under my inspection; especially as all of them having been sent under covers, which were not in the packet, the name of the lady to whom they were directed can only be guess'd at.

LETTER I.

" MADAM,

" I Now send you the Catalogue you have so often requested of me; but intreat you will be so good as not to let any one soul in the world know you had it from him who has the honour to be,

" With the greatest respect,

" MADAM,

" Your most humble,

" And most devoted servant."

The name subscrib'd to this had been torn off, either by design or accident; but the paper which accompany'd it was perfect and entire: — here follows a faithful transcript.

A CATALOGUE of some very scarce and curious pieces, in Prose and Verse, all wrote by some of the most eminent hands.

1. **T**HE Art of Pleasing in Conversation. An heroic Poem.—By the E— of C—.

2. An Essay on Power. Wrote originally in High Dutch, and now translated by a person of distinction into English. — Bound in red Turkey, finely gilt and letter'd.

3. The Virtues of Carmine, with a Recipe how to prepare it with success, — *probatum est.* — By the C— of C—. Gilt back and letter'd.

4. Patient Grizell. A Poem in six Cantos.— By the real C— of C—. Bound in Calf, very plain.

5. The Politician defeated. A Novel. In three Parts.

Parts. —
blue Pa

6. T
one A

7. C
—By a

8. T
muse th
sufficien

By the

9. R
dity of
C—

10. up
ward
learned
Stitch'd

11. L
By the

12. ke
laboriou
ences.
letter'd

13. man
In Boa

14. —By N

15. wou
V—
ten read

16. dent of

17. three
Paper.

Parts. — By the E— of E——. Stitch'd in blue Paper.

6. The Croaker. A Tragi-comical Farce of one Act.—By L— R——.

7. Cookery improv'd, after the Epicurean stile. —By a Club of Gentlemen. In sheets.

8. The Chaste Maid; or, A new Way to amuse the Town.—A Comedy of three Acts, each sufficient for a Winter Night's Entertainment. —By the facetious H— F——, Esq;

9. Rules to chuse a Wife; shewing the Absurdity of all those generally observed. — By Sir J— C——. In Boards.

10. A philosophical Definition of Card-Craft,— upwards of forty Years compiling.—By the very learned and most ingenious Professor Mr. H——e. Stitch'd in gilt Paper.

11. Frugality. A Poem. In nine Cantos. —By the C—— of B——. Bound in Vellum.

12. A Collection of Jests and merry Phrases, to keep young Pupils Heads from aching with more laborious Studies.—By a Tutor in the modish Sciences. Finely bound in blue Turkey, gilt back and letter'd.

13. Try before you buy. A Poem after the manner of Hudibras.—By the E— of R——. In Boards.

14. The Charms of Novelty. A Pindaric Essay. —By Miss C——. In Sheets.

15. The Pleasures of Matrimony; or, who would not be a Husband. A Farce. —By L— V——. Stitch'd, and very much sullied with often reading.

16. A dissertation on Flys Eggs.— By the President of a learned Society. In Boards.

17. Laugh and die down. A Ballad Opera of three Acts. —By L— P——. Stitch'd in blue Paper.

18. An Essay to prove that true Honour is always concomitant with good sense.—By the E— of O——. Bound in plain blue Turkey.

19. Conjugal Love. A Pastoral, of one continued Scene.—By the E— of N——. Printed on a new Elzevir letter, and neatly bound withoutawdriness or affectation.

20. The Patriot. A secret History.—By G— D—— Esq; Bound in clouded Calf.

21. The Double Dealer; or, The Westminster Disappointment. A farce of two A&ts.—By Sir G—— V——. Stitch'd in Cap Paper.

22. An Eulogy on Apostacy.—By L— G——. Bound in Calf and gilt back.

23. Love in a Bottle. A Poem, in three Cantos.— By the E— of M——. Stitch'd in blue Paper.

24. Redivivus; or, Old Age and Gallantry reconciled. A humorous Farce of one Act.—By the E— of H——. Stitch'd.

25. An Exhortation to Hospitality to Foreigners, even tho' it should happen to be destructive to the Liberties of the Natives.—By L— T——, as he deliver'd it at the Hay-Market. Bound in the French Taste.

26. Criticisms on the Play of — Rule a Wife and Have a Wife.—By L— P——. In Boards.

27. The Fox weary of Goose-hunting. A Fable.— By the D— of D——. Bound in Parchment.

28. The Lover's Catechism. A new Ballad.— By the celebrated Miss A——.

29. An infallible remedy for curing the Scotch Itch. without Bleeding.—By the D— of A——.

30. The Beauties of domestic Life, illustrated with Examples. A Pastoral Eclogue.— By the D— of B——. Neatly bound.

31. Love

31. An Ep—
B—
very ric—
32. lins's I—
Stitch'd—
33. W—
34. By the—
35. By C—
36. Treati—
Mr. V—
37. series
which
G—
38. D—
Ladyf—
39. ment
ration
Busine—
By M—
40. celebra—
vent—
41. vate C—
former—
than
Curio—
42.

31. Love levels all; or, A lucky Trip to Bath. An Epic Poem without any Episodes. By C—— B——. Printed on a half worn out letter but very richly bound.

32. Instructions for a Supplement to Arthur Collins's Peerage of England. — By L—— L——. Stitch'd in Marble Paper.

33. Verses in praise of Breeding. — By Miss W——.

34. True Magnificence. An Heroic Poem. — By the D—— of M——. Finely bound.

35. Love in a Coach. A true Seeret History. — By C—— V——. Stitch'd.

36. Second Thoughts best. A Philosophical Treatise, dedicated to a Brother of the Horn. — By Mr. W——. Bound in Sheeps skin.

37. The Triumvirate of Converts; — being a series of Epistles on moral and religious Subjects, which pass'd between L—— T——, C—— G——, and Mrs. C——. In Boards.

38. The Escape. A Satyre. Inscrib'd to L—— D—— M——, by a well-wisher to her Ladyship.

39. A Scheme intended to be offer'd to Parliament for the erecting Stock-jobbers into a Corporation, and having a Hall of their own to transact Business in, without going to Exchange-Alley. — By Mr. P——.

40. A Letter sent with a Side of Venison to the celebrated Mrs. J—— D——, in the Piazza, Co-vent-Garden. — By L—— T—— e.

41. A short Treatise concerning public and private Charities, proving to a Demonstration that the former are of much more Emolument to the Giver than the latter. — By L—— E—— J.——. Curiously bound, with a Register.

42. The Humiliation. A Poem. Address'd

to the Inexorables.—By L— G—— S——, Stitch'd.

43. A Prophecy that Votes for Members of Parliament will fall to no Price at the next Westminster Election.—By Sir W—— Y——.

Having folded and replaced this Paper in the pocket whence I had taken it, I proceeded to the others,

LETTER II.

“ MADAM,
 “ IT must be confess'd that you are endow'd with
 “ a courage and resolution superior to what most
 “ of your sex can boast of but you must give me
 “ leave to say, at the same time, that in these af-
 “ fairs we men run much the greatest hazards; in
 “ case of discovery our persons are liable to fall a
 “ sacrifice to the resentment of an injur'd husband,
 “ and our fortunes sure to be ruin'd by way of re-
 “ paration of his disgrace,—whereas the worst you
 “ have to fear is a divorce:—the laws are favour-
 “ able to wives,---the portion you brought with you
 “ is either return'd, or an annuity equivalent;---and
 “ as for the little shame you sustain by such a pro-
 “ cedure, it is well aton'd for by your being freed
 “ from the loathsome carefles of the man you hate,
 “ and at full liberty to pursue your inclinations with
 “ him you love.---Be assur'd, dear madam, I would
 “ venture much for the continuance of the blessing
 “ you permit me to enjoy; but I find the inter-
 “ course between us begins to be suspected, and you
 “ must therefore pardon me that I yield to neces-
 “ sity, and refrain any farther meetings with you,
 “ at least for the present:—I was yesterday at
 “ Court, and heard some whispers that your jea-
 “ lous coxcomb will soon be sent abroad;—if such
 “ a thing

“ a thing should happen, as I have some pretty
“ good reasons to believe it will, I shall return with
“ double transport to your embraces, 'till then
“ prudence obliges me to deny myself that happiness ; but at how great a distance soever I keep
“ my person, I beg you will do me the justice to
“ believe my heart is always with you, and that I
“ can never cease to be,

“ With the greatest sincerity,

“ Dear MADAM,

“ Your most obliged,

“ And most faithfully

“ Devoted servant,

“ PHILETES.

“ P. S. I would not have you harbour any unjust suspicions, either of me or your fair friend, for upon my soul I never had the least design upon her in the way you mean ; and you will find, whenever it is convenient for me to renew my devoirs to you, that I like no woman better than yourself.—Once more I bid you unwillingly adieu.

LETTER III.

“ Dear Creature,

“ YOUR Damon and my Strephon, as we call them, are both with me ; — they have found out the most charming place that ever was for us to scamper to, whenever we can delude the eyes of our impertinent gaolers ; — if you can find any excuse to get loose from yours, the rendezvous agreed upon is the banks of the Serpentine-river, just after sun-set, whence we are to follow our leaders where they shall please to conduct us.—Lady Fillup has a rout to-night

“ —you may tell your tyrant you are going there ;
 “ but why should I put pretences into a head so
 “ much more fertile than my own ?—Fail not to
 “ come, however, if it be not a thing utterly im-
 “ possible for human wit to accomplish ; but let us
 “ know your resolution by the bearer.

“ I am,

“ With the most perfect amity,

“ My DEAR,

“ Your very obedient,

“ Humble servant,

“ CORRINNA.

“ P. S. While I was writing the above, Damon,
 “ to shew either his love, or wit, or both, took up
 “ a pen and employ'd it in the inclos'd.

To my Soul's Treasure.

“ FLY, charmer, fly,—leave home-bred cares
 “ behind,
 “ With thoughts of coming joys fill all your mind ;
 “ Let smiling pleasure wanton o'er your face,
 “ and kindling transports brighten ev'ry grace ;
 “ Each vein of mine beats high with love's alarms,
 “ Haste then, and lull me gently in your arms.

“ I know I am a bad poet, but you will find
 “ me a better lover, and that your charms are ca-
 “ pable of inspiring me with more fire than all the
 “ ladies of Parnassus put together.

I am,

“ With truth and tenderness,

“ My lovely dear,

“ Your most passionate,

“ And faithful adorer,

“ DAMON.

The

The letter of Philetus, and that of Corrinna and Damon, being dated on the same day, discover'd to me that the lady who received them was not quite inconsolable for the loss of one lover as she had another in store ; and also that she fail'd not to comply with the invitation of Damon, and that she had dropp'd her pocket at the rendezvous appointed by Corrinna.

I make no question but that the inquisitive reader would be glad to know the name and rank of this so much admir'd lady ; but as I can do no more, at most, than guess at either, I should be loath to impose my bare and uncertain conjectures upon the public, for fear of a mistake, and being guilty of the worst of wrongs, that of prejudicing the character of an innocent person.—I wish every one would pay as much regard as myself to what Shakespeare says on this occasion :

‘ Good name, in man or woman,
‘ Is the immediate jewel of our souls :
‘ Who steals my purse, steals trash : 'tis something,
‘ nothing ;
‘ 'Twas mine, 'tis his, and has been slave to thou-
‘ fands ;
‘ But he that filches from me my good name,
‘ Robs me of that which not enriches him,
‘ And makes me poor indeed.’

Could I have form'd even the most distant supposition to what place Strephon and Damon had conducted their ladies, I doubt not but my curiosity would have carry'd me thither, where my enquiries might perhaps have gain'd me the satisfaction of knowing how much of the night these inamoratos had pass'd together, and in what manner they had been entertain'd ; but no mention being

made of any thing farther than the place where they were to meet, in Corinna's letter, I was oblig'd to content myself with what discoveries I had made, and so must the reader also.

I cannot conclude this chapter without an observation which has constantly occur'd to me whenever any thing fell in my way of the kind I have been relating,—which is this:—as the wife has the honour of her husband in keeping, it seems to me a most ungenerous and cruel addition to the crime of wronging his bed, when by public indiscretions she exposes him to that contempt and ridicule which the world, though without the least shadow of reason or justice, is always sure to cast upon the husband of a transgressing wife.

I know very well that people are apt to say,—that when a woman abandons herself to vice she presently becomes utterly incapable of paying any regard to her own reputation, much less to that of her husband;—and that it appears a much greater matter of surprise when they see women, as it must be confess'd many such there are, who, without being criminal in fact, behave in such a manner as to draw on themselves the severest censures.

Though I must allow that this too frequently happens, yet I cannot agree in opinion with those who seem to wonder it should be so, and look upon it as a kind of inconsistency in nature;—I rather imagine that guilt is more likely to inspire circumspection;—a woman who knows herself culpable, I should expect to be very careful not to do any thing in public that might cause suspicion of her being less reserv'd in private; whereas a consciousness of innocence, especially in a thoughtless disposition, may easily render a woman unguarded, and less observant of those decorums, which, tho' not

not eff
putatio

Turns
cont
benj
par
mon

T
minds
years
to ma
may
seldo
one o

• Ch
• An

F
very
eatio
acco
stanc
with
some
the i
of t
wor
selve

P
prop

not essential to virtue, are doubtless necessary to reputation.

CHAP. V.

Turns chiefly upon the subject of Education, and contains some things which the Author is apprehensive will not be very agreeable to the Female part of his readers, whether of the elderly or the more youthful class, yet may serve as a useful admonition to both.

THE good or the ill fortune of our whole lives chiefly depends on the first bent given to our minds in youth;—impressions made in our early years take a deep root within us, grow up with us to maturity, become part of ourselves, so that they may properly be call'd a second nature, and are seldom, if ever, totally eradicated.—According to one of our English poets,

‘ Children, like tender osiers, take the bow,
‘ And as they first are fashion'd, still will grow.’

For this reason it is that parents, unless they are very remiss indeed, take so much pride in the education of their children, bestowing on them every accomplishment befitting of their rank and circumstances, and oftentimes more than will well agree with either;—yet all this will not do,—there are some previous steps to be taken, without which all the improvements we can make, from the lessons of the most able masters, will never render us worthy the esteem of others, or truly happy in ourselves, for any length of time.

Pride, and an impatience of control, are the first propensities discoverable in human nature;—if these are

are humour'd and indulged in their beginnings, which is indeed in our most early years, they will soon become too headstrong and too turbulent to be afterwards restrain'd, and subjected to the government of reason, by any methods whatever that can be taken for that purpose;—their first indications should therefore be carefully watch'd, and check'd in every instance.

I smile to think what objections are commonly made, by some over-fond parents, to such a manner of proceeding;—if I am not mistaken these two are the principal; that to curb children too much is apt to break their spirits; and that the world being so full of disappointments, that few people escape them when they come to maturity, it is pity the poor things should know sorrow before their time;—to both which I take the liberty to make this reply:

First,—As to what they call the breaking of the spirit,—that due decorum I would recommend, takes no more of the spirit from the young master or miss than what is necessary to keep them from running into those follies and excesses which, how excusable soever in childhood, render them contemptible in riper years;—as the skilful gardener lops from his tender plant those superfluous branches, which, if suffer'd to continue, would hinder it from growing to perfection.

Then as to the second,—Every one knows the sorrows their little hearts are capable of feeling make no lasting impression on them,—they will cry one moment and laugh the next;—the contradiction they meet with, will only make them sensible that they neither can nor ought to expect they are to have their will in all things; and the trifling disappointments given them will enable them to sustain

with

with fortitude those of more consequence which may hereafter possibly befall them.

A Boy is less liable to the danger of being spoil'd by too much indulgence than a Girl; because he is no sooner taken from the nursery than he is either put apprentice to some trade or calling; or, if of a superior rank, under the inspection of a grave and austere tutor;—that is, when the tender mamma does not interfere, and give orders that no intense studies be imposed upon him, for fear of making his head ach;—but this seldom happens,—her husband, if she has one alive, will not endure his son shall be bred a dunce to please his wife,—whereas he meddles not with the education of his daughters, but leaves them to the direction of their mother.

The good lady, no doubt, is extremely ambitious that her daughter shall be one of the most accomplish'd young creatures in town;—to this end the best masters in their several sciences are employ'd to teach her Music, Dancing and French;—if she is well vers'd in these,—knows how to dress in the most becoming manner, and to give a genteel turn to an invitation on a card, she is look'd upon as complete in every necessary qualification;—for as to any understanding in cookery, pastry, or needle-work, they are consider'd as vulgar things, and below the delicacy of a fine bred lady.

I have the honour to be pretty nearly related, by marriage, to lady Plyant, her late husband being my first cousin;—decency obliges me to visit the widow sometimes;—she is a very affable good natur'd woman, and has, indeed, a greater share of understanding than her too great compliance with the customs of the age will permit her to make shew of.

She:

She keeps a prodigious deal of company, for which reason I see her much less frequently than otherwise I should do;—but happening to pass by her house one day, when no coach nor chair was in waiting there, I ventur'd to knock at the door, and was glad to be told she was alone;—I had not, however, been with her above ten minutes before two or three loud raps proclaim'd the approach of some new guest, and presently after a grave elderly lady was introduced.

Lady Plyant receiv'd her with much politeness and a great shew of friendship, and after the first salutations were over, and we had reseated ourselves, said to her,

Lady Plyant. ‘ Dear mrs. Loyter, I have not
• seen you this age, and have been quite unhappy
• in the want of you.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ Dear lady Plyant, the loss is
• wholly mine;—but I have been so embarrass'd;
• —my poor girl has been extremely indisposed.’

Lady Plyant. ‘ Bless me!—Miss not well, and
• I hear nothing of it!—But I hope she is better?’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ Perfectly recover'd, madam;—
• she will have the honour of waiting on your la-
• dyship this evening; she is gone to make about
• half a dozen visits; but pray'd heartily to find
• nobody at home, that she might follow me here
• the sooner.’

Lady Plyant. ‘ How perfectly kind that was;
• —well, she is a charming creature;—you are
• the happiest woman in the world in having such
• a daughter:—I protest among all my acquaint-
• ance I do not know any young lady that comes
• up to her;—there is something so sweet,—so en-
• gaging, in every thing she does.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ She is infinitely oblig'd to your
• ladyship;—indeed I have taken a great deal of
pains

‘ pains with her ; for as I have nothing to do with my sons, they being all under their father’s management, and I have no other daughter, I should never have forgiven myself if I had not used my utmost endeavours to form her mind so as to make her as agreeable as possible to her acquaintance ; and, I thank Heaven, I have been pretty successful in it.’

Lady Plyant. ‘ Oh, madam, the world must allow you have,—Miss is the darling of every body that knows her.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ The girl has a great deal of good nature, madam, and does not want a genius and capacity to mingle in conversation on almost any subject becoming a young lady to be acquainted with.’

I had been upon the wing to take my flight almost from the moment mrs. Loyter came in ; but what was said in relation to her daughter determin’d me to stay ’till miss should arrive, in order to be convinced how far her person and behaviour corresponded with the high character had been given of her.

I waited, tho’ not without some impatience, ’till abundance more had pass’d between these two ladies on the same subject, and on several other no less trifling, which as I cannot think the reader will be better pleas’d with than I was myself, I shall forbear to insert.

At length miss Loyter appear’d, and I stretch’d my eye-lids to their full extent to take in all the charms I had heard she was possess’d of ;—the girl, indeed, was well enough ; but I could discover nothing extraordinary about her ; nor did her eyes or air give any indications of that sparkling wit her mother seem’d to boast of ; but as I thought it unfair to give a verdict on mere appear-
ances

ances, I suspended my judgment on her understanding 'till I had more substantial proofs.

The discourse at first was only on where she had been,—what she had seen,—and how such and such a lady was dress'd ;—I found miss talk'd very learnedly on this subject, and therefore was not without hope of hearing something from her equally lively on others of more importance ; but none being started I was compell'd to listen to the several animadversions made by these three ladies on caps and flounces, to my very great mortification, as any one who reads this work may easily suppose by what it discovers of my humour.

At last miss happening to say that she had met mrs. O—— in one of the visits she had been making, I presently catch'd up the word and said to her,—‘ Then, madam, I doubt not but some conversation pass'd which you will do us a favour to repeat, as the lady you mention is perfectly acquainted with public affairs, and reasons upon them very justly.’—To which she made this answer :

Miss Loyter. ‘ So they say, sir ; but she was just going out when I came in ; I was heartily glad of it ; for I hate to hear a deal of stuff about things that I know nothing of.’

As I had a good share in the ensuing part of this conversation, I shall, to avoid confusion, repeat my own words as if spoke by another person.

Author. ‘ Then, madam, you have no relish for politics ?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ No truly, sir.—What business have I with the transactions of kings, and princes, and parliaments ?—It makes me sick to hear so much of wars, and treaties, and conventions, and taxes, and grievances, and such nonsense.’

Author.

Author. ‘ I must confess, madam, that the affairs of Europe are a little intricate at present, and may be puzzling to a lady’s comprehension ; —but I suppose you are well acquainted with the histories of former times.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Lord, sir, what have I to do with former times ?’

Author. ‘ Every one, madam, has to do with the annals of the country they were born in.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ These things are quite out of my daughter’s way ; but for all that I can assure you, sir, she reads a great deal.’

Author. ‘ It would be pity, indeed, madam, so fine a young lady should be altogether ignorant of books :—I imagine therefore that mil’s genius soars to a higher pitch,—the wonders of the creation, so beautifully defined in some treatises of natural philosophy, perhaps are her favourite contemplations ;—I make no question but she has read *Le Spectacle de la Nature*.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ I believe not, sir.—Have you, my dear ?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Not I, truly ;—but I have heard enough of it :—they say that there are four volumes of it taken up with nothing but a description of Trees, and Birds, and Beasts, and Fishes, and nasty Insects.’

Author. ‘ What do you think, madam, of Fontenelle’s *Plurality of Worlds* ?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ O hang it,—I was never so disappointed in my life ;—I thought by the beginning, when I found a gentleman and lady were taking their promenade together by moonlight, that some pretty adventure would have ensued ;—but good God, the Author has made them talk of nothing but the Planets and the things that happen in the Sky.’

Author.

Author. ‘ I fancy then, miss, that Romances and Novels are chiefly your taste.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ I hate Romances, they are too tedious;—as for Novels, I like some of them well enough, particularly mrs. Behn’s;—but I know not how it is, the Authors now-a-days have got such a way of breaking off in the middle of their stories, that one forgets one half before one comes to the other.’

Author. ‘ Digressions, miss, when they contain fine sentiments and judicious remarks, are certainly the most valuable parts of that sort of writing.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ I cannot think so, and I could wish the Authors would keep their sentiments and remarks to themselves, or else have them printed in a different letter, that one might know when to begin and when to leave off.’

Author. ‘ I presume, miss, you are fond of Poetry?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Not very fond;—I can’t say I ever read much of it.’

Author. ‘ Then you can’t say whether you give the preference to the ancient or the modern?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ No, really;—I never thought about the matter.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ Sir, my daughter is not so vain as to set up for a critic, tho’ I am pretty sure she knows more than she pretends to;—I have heard some good judges allow her to have a very distinguishing taste in some of the Theatrical representations.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ O I love a Farce or a Pantomime extravagantly;—they are vastly diverting.’

Author.

Author. ‘ Then I suppose, miss, you see Plays merely for the Entertainments which so frequently succeed them?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Not entirely so;—there are some Plays I like well enough; but there are others so cramm’d with the words Liberty and Public Spirit, that they are quite forfeiting.’

Author. ‘ When there is too much of these things, madam, the Licence-Office knows how to correct them.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ There is Cato, for example,—some people cry it up; but for my part I think it a piece of dull stupid stuff, excepting one scene between Portius and Lucia.’

I thought I had now sufficiently sounded the genius and capacity of this young lady, therefore ceased to engross her any longer to myself, and soon after took my leave, secretly wondering at the strange partiality of mrs. Loyter in regard both of herself and daughter.

A few hours, however, made me begin to judge somewhat more favourably of these ladies;—‘ Tho’ mrs. Loyter, said I within myself, is mis-taken in believing she had been able to make her daughter pass for a wit, her endeavours, notwithstanding, may have had better success in other accomplishments more essential to her happiness,—she may have made her a good economist, and perfectly acquainted with every thing requisite for the well managing a family.’

I had the more reason to imagine that this young lady was train’d up in frugality and good house-wifry, as I had been told that mr. Loyter lived to the height of his income,—that he saved no money,—had several sons, the eldest of whom, after his decease, was to run away with the estate; so that it could not be expected the daughter would have

have any fortune to entitle her to a husband at all suitable to her birth and the appearance she made.

But as I was always willing to be convinced whether my conjectures were right or wrong, I resolved to make an Invisible Visit to this family. — Just as I came to the house, mr. Loyter was going out, and the door being open'd for him I slipp'd in and went up stairs; — the old lady was sitting in the dining room window with her spectacles on, very hard at work; — breakfast was but just over, as I found by the maid's removing the tea equipage, and Miss was gone up to dress, it seems; for she came down presently after in the same form I had seen her at lady Plyant's; — she ran directly to the great glass in order to examine how her petticoats hung at the bottom, — and then turn'd to her mother, and seeing what she was about said to her,

Miss Loyter. ‘ Lord, mamma, have you not done mending my tippet yet?’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ Indeed, my dear, it is past mending; — you have torn the lace in twenty places, I believe, with those ugly pins in your stomacher; — I wish you would take more care of your things.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Indeed I can’t be a slave to my cloaths.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ I would not have you, my dear; — but this vexes me, because it is the only handsome tippet you have; — you must e’en try to coax your father to give you a couple of pieces to buy you another, the first time you find him in a good humour; — for I assure you I have not a single guinea in the world.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Well, ’tis a shameful thing one has not money without asking for, when one has

‘ has a fancy to any thing.--- But, mamma, can
‘ nothing be done with this lace?’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ It will never make up again
‘ in the shape it is ;---but I believe I may contrive
‘ to make a handsome tucker out of it.’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Oh I shall like a tucker of it
‘ vastly ;---pray, mamma, do it as soon as you
‘ can :---I must go out and divert myself some
‘ where or other.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ Where, my dear?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Nay,—I have gone my round
‘ of visits twice over since any one of them has
‘ been return’d ;—I am only going to the next
‘ street to lady Lovetoy’s, to ask if Miss will take
‘ a walk with me in the Park.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ Very well, my dear ; but do
‘ not stay too long,—your father brings company
‘ home to day, and we are to have a great dinner ;
‘ —mr. Blossom, and his son just come from the
‘ University, are to be here, so I would not have
‘ you out of the way for the world ;—who can tell
‘ what may happen?’

Miss Loyter. ‘ Oh why did not I know that
‘ sooner,—I would have had on my new gaule
‘ cap ;---but ’tis no matter,---I will come home
‘ time enough to change it.’

With these words she snatch’d up her little muff
and gallop’d down stairs, leaving her poor mother
poring over the breaches she had undertaken to
rectify ;—presently after a servant maid came into
the room, and on mrs. Loyter’s demanding what
she wanted, made this reply :

Maid. ‘ I thought Miss had been here, ma-
‘ dam ;—I came to desire she would lend a hand to
‘ make a crust for the venison, and beat a little
‘ spice for the puddings.’

Mrs.

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ ‘Tis a sign, child, you came hither but last night;—my daughter does not know how to make crust.’

Maid. ‘ O dear, madam, any body may make a little paste to roast a piece of venison in.’

Mrs. Loyter. ‘ I tell you she knows nothing of cookery, nor I would not have her spoil her hands about it;—but if you will bring me up the pestle and mortar I will beat your spice for you.’

Maid. ‘ No, madam,—while I am fetching up the things, and carrying them down again, I can do it myself.’

The girl said no more, but went out of the room with a countenance which shew'd she was not very well pleased with the family she was come to serve:—I attended not the return of miss Loyter,—my curiosity was now fully satisfied, and I laid hold on the first opportunity I found to quit the house.

Methinks I hear how heartily the gay and witty part of my readers will laugh at the character of miss Loyter;—they will certainly look upon her as a stalking, staring, stupid, noteless creature; a moving piece of mere matter, uninform'd by any soul or spirit,—wholly incapable of deserving praise, and equally insensible of contempt;—’tis true she appears so,—yet may it not be owing so much to any deficiency of nature in her, as to the mistaken fondness of a mother, who fearing to give her a moment's discontent neglected to rouse the native sluggishness of her faculties by any exercise or employment.

What therefore can be expected from a young person bred in a supine indolence, accustom'd to have her will in every thing, and scarce taught the difference between good and evil, should her whole life long act as chance, or what is as bad, her own

own
all
cast.

*The
the
son
che*

*W
one
selves
ther
thinki
the se
that n
men
besto*

*Nu
brou
dern
I shal
yet er
sex to
are in
of the
for w*

*W
fam'd
Grace
Hypa
tismu
look
the la*

own undistinguishing fancy shall direct?—Bless all sober and thinking men from a wife of this cast.

C H A P. VI.

The Author expects will make a full atonement to the ladies for the too much plain dealing, as some of them may think, of the preceding chapter.

WOMEN and Wedlock are the common topics of ridicule among men, who without one spark of genius or capacity, imagine themselves wits, and set up for such; but whatever either they, or some who even have a better way of thinking in other things, pretend to alledge against the sex, it is very evident, and must be confess'd, that nature has endow'd the minds of many women with as great and valuable talents as ever she bestow'd on men.

Numberless are the examples which might be brought from the records both of ancient and modern history, to prove the truth of this assertion, but I shall content myself with mentioning only a few, yet enough to make those unworthy maligners of a sex to which, they know in their own hearts, they are indebted for all the convenience and happiness of their lives, take shame to themselves and blush for what they have said.

Who is so ignorant as not to have heard of the fam'd Cornelia of Rome,—the mother of the Gracchi,—and the wife of Brutus,—the learned Hypatia of Greece,—the Boadicea and the Cartimuda of ancient Britain;—but 'tis needless to look back into such distant times,—the wife of the late Peter the Great of Muscovy,—the impe-

perial heroine of Germany,—Signiora Laura of Italy,—and the present queens of Sweden and the Two Sicilies, are no less public than shining proofs of the capacity of a female mind.

And even here, in this degenerate island, where all wisdom and all virtue have been gradually decreasing for upwards of fifty years, there are not wanting some, I may say many ladies, who in private, and almost obscure life, are possess'd of qualifications that might add lustre to the highest stations.

In fine,—there is nothing more certain, than that if the women, generally speaking, are less knowing than the men, it is only because they are deny'd the same advantages of education, and the mistaken mother lavishes her whole cares in embellishing the pretty person of her daughter, and gives no attention to the cultivation of her understanding.

I am happy in the acquaintance of a lady whom I shall distinguish by the name of Amadea;—she had been married very young to a gentleman whom she tenderly lov'd, and by whom she was no less belov'd; but had the misfortune to lose him at the age of twenty-five, and was at the same time the mother of three daughters, the eldest scarce four years old.

The land estate, which was very considerable, descended to the next male heir of the family, and all the personals, with a jointure of four hundred per annum, to the fair widow, and each of her children five thousand pounds.

The first three years of her widowhood she lived the life of a recluse, seldom stirring out of her own house, except to her devotions, or when the necessity of her affairs oblig'd her;—nor did she, with her mourning, throw this reserve entirely off;—ho' it is now full thirteen years since her

*dear

dear husband's death, she neither visits nor receives visits as formerly, but confines her conversation to those of her kindred, or very long and intimate acquaintance ;—never appears at any public diversion, and rejects even the first mention of proposals for a second marriage, though several very advantageous ones have been attempted.

All her cares have been turn'd on the education of her children, and all her pleasures center'd in observing the improvements they made by the instructions given to them ;—she had never suffer'd their tender infancy to be frighted with idle stories of spirits and hobgoblins, nor amused with fairy tales ; from their most early years she awak'd reason in them, and contrived it so, that even the little sports she indulged them in should some way or other conduce to that great end.

As they grew bigger she had masters to teach them music and dancing, the French and Italian languages, and as much of the Latin as was sufficient to make them speak and write English properly ; but these politer studies were not to take up all their time,—the œconomy of domestic life she look'd upon as too necessary a qualification not to be well attended to,—some hours in every day were set apart for needle-work ; and whenever the table was to be furnish'd with any thing extraordinary, they were sure to be put under the tuition of the cook, and frequently assisted her in those parts of her business which were the most delicate and least laborious.

Thus desirous of enriching their minds with every useful kind of knowledge, it cannot be supposed that books were out of the question,—no,—each of these young ladies takes upon her, in her turn, to read to the two others the whole time they are at work.—Baile's Dictionary may justly

be call'd a Library of itself, as it gives a general insight into almost every remarkable occurrence that has happen'd in the world since the creation ; and whenever they found any mention made of persons or transactions which gave them a curiosity of being more fully acquainted with the particulars of, she sent immediately to her Bookseller for the history to which that passage referr'd.

But above all other things, this discreet mother was studiously watchful to prevent the pride and little vanities, so incident to human nature, from taking too fast hold of their young hearts ;—betimes she taught them, that nothing concerning themselves, except the embellishment of their minds, was worthy their attention ;—that all cares relating to dres or person, beyond what cleanliness and decency required, were superfluous and silly, and that every minute wasted at the toylet would rob them of some advantage they might otherwise receive.

I am well aware, that those of my fair readers who have been brought up in a different manner, which, by the way, I fear are much the greatest part, will be apt to cry out against the conduct of Amadea ;—they will perhaps say, they wonder the poor girls are not mop'd, and that they must certainly be dull stupid creatures ;— but those who think thus need only have a sight of the young ladies to be convinced of their mistake, — nothing can be more lively and spirituous than all the three sisters,—smiles of innocence and joy dwell for ever on their faces, and denote an innate cheerfulness and satisfaction, which all those hurrying pleasures, so eagerly pursued by others, have not the power of bestowing.

I made several Invisible Visits to them in their own apartment, and I know very few things capable

pable of giving me a more sincere delight than I took in observing the behaviour of these young beauties, at times when they thought themselves entirely free from all inspection, and had no occasion to put any restraint upon their words or actions.

Never did I find them lolling out of the windows, or consulting their look or motions in the great glass ;—never heard them complaining that they were not permitted to be the first in every new fashion ;—never wishing to be in the Mall, or any other public place ; never wantonly giggling about love or lovers ;—never quarreling with each other, or ridiculing the foibles of their acquaintance.

Sometimes I caught them playing and singing to their instruments,—at others amusing themselves with practising some new dance, and not seldom busily employ'd in needlework for the use of the family ; and at the same time making such remarks as occur'd to them on some passage or other in history :—in fine, I could perceive nothing but what put me in mind of the three Graces, who, according to one of our poets, are actuated but by one soul, and that,—all harmony and sweet contentment.

The truth is, Amadea never makes use of any austerity,—the precepts she gives are only enforced by her own example, and deliver'd in such a manner as to steal themselves upon the mind, and have no need of any compunction from authority ;—so that one may truly say,

Wisdom in her appears so bright and gay,
They hear with pleasure, and with pride obey.

Happy the children who have such a mother ;— happy the mother who has children such as these :— I am persuaded that many examples of this kind might be found, if parents would be at the pains to pursue the same measures Amadea did, and instil into their offspring the principles of virtue and wisdom before they knew what was meant by vice and folly.

C H A P. VII.

Contains the recital of an adventure, which, perhaps, will not be found the less, but the more interesting, for its being not altogether of so singular a nature as some others in this work may have appear'd.

I Was one morning taking my Invisible progression into those pleasant fields which lie behind Montague-House, not with the least view of making any discoveries, for I could expect none in that retired place, but merely to enjoy the benefit of the fresh air, which is almost constantly impregnated with various odours wafted from the adjacent gardens.

I had not walk'd many minutes, however, before I heard the tread of some persons close behind me ;— I stepp'd aside to let them pass, and saw that one of them was Narcissa, the only daughter of a gentleman who lived in that neighbourhood ;— the person who accompany'd her was her maid, as I soon after found by the following dialogue between them :

Narcissa. ‘Indeed, Betty, I think Captain Pike shews but little love to let us be here before him.’

Betty.

Betty. ' Oh, madam, you should consider that gentlemen in his post are not always masters of their time ;—you know he said he came to town on affairs of the regiment,—and something, perhaps, may have happen'd ;—but whatever it is that detains him it cannot be want of affection, I am so certain of that, I would pawn my life upon it.'

Narcissa. ' You are very confident, Betty, to offer such security for a man you have never seen but twice in your life.'

Betty. ' If I had never seen him but once, madam, I have seen enough to make me know that he loves you to distraction :—poor gentleman,—if he should not succeed in his addresses I am sure he has reason to curse me.'

Narcissa. ' Curse thee, Betty,—why curse thee ?'

Betty. ' He might never have seen you if it had not been for me.—Don't you remember, madam, how I teaz'd you to go into Jolliffe's shop and buy the last new play ;—he was sitting reading when we came in, and I shall never forget how he threw down the pamphlet he had in his hand and stared at you,—and how he sigh'd ;—poor soul, he lost his heart from that very moment ;—then how he follow'd us into the Park ;—and how he trembled when he ask'd your leave to join us ?'

Narcissa. ' Pish,—that might be all affection.'

Betty. ' No, madam,—no such matter ;—the tongue may deceive one, but the eyes can not ;—all his looks, while he was talking to you in the Mall, put me in mind of the description Leonora gives of Torrismond in the play :

His very eye-balls trembled with his love,
And sparkled from their casements humid fires.

• And then, when you were so good to give him
• a meeting afterwards in the walk by Rosamond's
• Pond, how tenderly he express'd himself ;—for
• my part, my heart melted at every word he
• said.

Narcissa. ‘ He can talk moving enough, that's
• certain ;—but yet, Betty, I ought not to be too
• hasty in giving credit to a man I know so little
• of, or what designs he may have upon me.’

Betty. ‘ Nay, madam, I think you know as
• much of him as you can do without being mar-
• ried to him :—Did not he tell you that his name
• was Pike, and that he was a Captain of Colonel
• *****'s Regiment ?—As to his designs, you
• cannot doubt of their being honourable, as he
• begg'd you would permit him to visit you, and
• ask your father's leave to make his addresses.’

Narcissa. ‘ Ah, Betty, I wish such a thing
• could be, for he is a prodigious pretty fellow ;—
• but it is impossible, you know my father hates a
• soldier,—calls them a pack of locusts, and says
• they are the bane both of liberty and property ;
• —besides he has always design'd me for mr.
• Oakly.’

Betty. ‘ Ay, madam, and will make you have
• mr. Oakly too, or lead apes in hell if you don't
• take care to prevent it :—you know, madam, a
• very few days hence that abominable act will
• take place which deprives you of all liberty of
• chusing for yourself.’

Narcissa. ‘ Heigh hoe.’

Betty. ‘ Never sigh, madam, but resolve.’

Narcissa. ‘ On what ? and a trifling gribblum.’

Betty.

Betty. ‘ To run away from the miseries of a forced marriage ;—to exert the spirit of a true-born Englishwoman, and be your own provider.’

Narcissa. ‘ How thou talkest !’

Betty. ‘ I talk nothing but reason, madam ;—but here comes one who I fancy will be able to urge it more effectually.’

The person whom she had been so strenuously pleading for now appear’d,—he was a tall well-made man, and had a good soldiery aspect; but yet I thought I discover’d something about him that shew’d as if he had not always been accustomed to wear the rich cloaths he now had on ;—there wanted that easy freedom in his air, which, in my opinion, chiefly denotes the true-bred gentleman, and I presently set him down in my mind, either for an imposter, or one whom some lucky chance had elevated far above his birth.

He approach’d Narcissa with a low bow, and after taking hold of one of her hands and kissing it with the greatest fervency, address’d her in these terms :

Capt. Pike. ‘ How miserable have I been, my angel, in being kept thus long from your divine presence !’

Narcissa. ‘ I do not doubt, sir, but you have been better engag’d.’

Capt. Pike. ‘ Cruel supposition. — How can you so far wrong your own transcendent charms, or my profound adoration of them; as to imagine that the whole world has any thing in it which I should put in competition with the blessing I now enjoy ?—but the Major of our Regiment is in town, and unluckily sent for me this morning,—we subalterns must obey our commanding officer ; but I hope in a few months to

‘ be Colonel, and I shall then have leisure to lie
‘ eternally at your feet.’

Betty. ‘ Ah, sir, I am afraid before that time
‘ my lady will be obliged to have somebody else lie
‘ at her feet.’

Capt. Pike. ‘ How !’

Narcissa. ‘ Hold your prating, hussy.... Who
‘ gave you the privilege of speaking ?’

Betty. ‘ Madam, the respect I have for you
‘ will not suffer me to be silent.... I tell you no-
‘ thing but the truth, sir ;---as soon as this cursed
‘ Clandestine Marriage-bill takes place, which
‘ you know will be next Monday, my lady will
‘ be forced to marry a man to whom she has the
‘ greatest aversion.’

Capt. Pike. ‘ Oh Heaven !---so near being torn
‘ from all my hopes !---And can you, madam,---
‘ can a lady of your delicacy submit to loath’d
‘ embraces !’

Narcissa. ‘ Sir, this foolish wench talks ! she
‘ knows not what ;---the act she mentions does
‘ not empower my father to drag me to the Altar,
‘ ---it only hinders me from chusing for myself ;---
‘ I may live single if I please.’

Capt. Pike. ‘ Live single ! --- Heaven forbid
‘ that so much youth and beauty should be con-
‘ demn’d to a cold celibacy !---No,---nature en-
‘ dow’d you not with such superior charms but to
‘ bless some man who by his abundant love might
‘ make him worthy of them.---Oh that I were the
‘ happy he !’

Narcissa. ‘ Think not of it, Captain, ---my
‘ father would never give his consent to any one
‘ but the person he has made choice of for me,
‘ much less would he endure to see me wedded to
‘ a gentleman in the army.’

Capt.

Capt.
‘ cable
Narc
‘ —I th
‘ war,
‘ in tim
Capt.
‘ there
‘ able t
‘ nothin
Narc
‘ great
‘ my fa
Capt.
‘ I det
‘ presen
‘ mone
‘ vacan
Narc
‘ mysel
‘ me th
Capt.
‘ contin
‘ not be
‘ your
‘ be jus
‘ end to
‘ nounde
Narc
‘ say of
Capt.
‘ forms
‘ with t
‘ sides,
‘ you u
‘ soluti
Betty

Capt. Pike. ' And have you too that implacable aversion to a fash and croflet ? '

Narcissa. ' I will not pretend to say I have ; —I think the army our only security in time of war, and the greatest ornament of our country in times of peace.'

Capt. Pike. ' Oh then, if I could flatter myself there was nothing in my person more disagreeable to you than in my function, I should have nothing left to fear.'

Narcissa. ' Yes, indeed, you would, sir, a great deal ; for I assure you, if I married you, my father would not give me a groat.'

Capt. Pike. ' Let him keep his dirty trash,—I despise money,—the commission I enjoy at present will keep us above contempt, and I have money in the Bank ready to purchase the first vacant command of a regiment.'

Narcissa. ' Can you imagine I would give myself to a man who has but just begun to tell me that he loves me ? '

Capt. Pike. ' My whole life shall be but one continued scene of courtship ;—be assured I shall not be the less, but the more, infinitely the more your adorer by being your husband ;—oh then be just to my ardent passion,—generously put an end to my despair, and let those divine lips pronounce the happy fiat to my wishes.'

Narcissa. ' Bless me, what would the world say of such a thing ? '

Capt. Pike. ' The wise, madam, despise all forms.—Do not kings and princes marry even with those whom they never saw before ;---besides, the late proceedings of the legislature lays you under a necessity of coming to a speedy resolution.'

Betty. ' Ay, madam, remember the Act.'

Capt. Pike. ‘ Ay, madam, consider how soon
that fatal Monday will arrive, which takes from
you the power of snatching from eternal misery
the man who loves you more than life, and
would sacrifice every thing for you.’

Narcissa. ‘ I must confess, Captain, your of-
fering to take me without a fortune demands some
gratitude on my part ; and if---but no more,----
I see a lady yonder whom I would not wish
should surprise us in this conversation ; this even-
ing you shall know my final resolution.---Where
can I send to you ?’

Capt. Pike. ‘ I have an appointment with some
young officers this afternoon at Will’s Coffee-
house, Whitehall, and shall there wait my doom
with the most ardent impatience ;---but before
you pass the irrevocable sentence of my fate,
think, ---oh think, my life or death depends up-
on it !’

Narcissa. ‘ Well, well,---be easy :---but go.’
Capt. Pike. ‘ I must obey ;---may love and
all its powers plead for me, and atone for this
cruel interruption.’

He said no more, but turn’d away as his mistress
had commanded, and pass’d on to another part of
the field, while she advanced to meet the lady she
had mentioned ; but Betty, who was heartily vex’d
at this accident, could not forbear crying out as
they went along.

Betty. ‘ I wonder what should bring Marilla
here ?’

The words were either not heard, or not regarded
by Narcissa, who, I could perceive by her looks, was
little less disconcerted ;—she met her friend, how-
ever, with a shew of gaiety and satisfaction, and
as soon as they came near each other saluted her in
these terms :

Narcissa.

Narcissa. ' My dear Marilla, 'tis a wonder to see you in such a place as this ;—you used to be an enemy to all solitary walks.'

Marilla. ' So I am still ; but I have been at your house and was told you were here, so came in mere good-nature, to hinder you from indulging melancholy ; but I find I might have spared myself that trouble.—Pray who was that pretty fellow that left you just now ?'

Narcissa. ' I know not ;—he only came up to us, seeing nobody else in the place, I suppose, to ask which was the nearest way to Great Russel-street.'

Marilla. ' Rather to ask the way to a fair lady's heart who lives not far from Great Russel-street.—Oh, Narcissa, you cannot deceive me ;—I could easily perceive at the distance I was, that he did not part from you with the air of a man who had no other business than to ask such an impertinent question :—besides I must tell you that you are a very ill dissembler,—your blushes, and the soft confusion in your eyes, declare not only that he is a lover, but also that he is a favour'd one ; I know well enough that you met him here by appointment.—Prithee let me into the whole of the secret.'

Narcissa still persisted in her first asseverations ; but the other seem'd not to give the least credit on that score, and assuming a more serious air than hitherto she had put on, spoke thus :

Marilla. ' I perceive, my dear Narcissa, I am not thought worthy of your confidence in this point, tho' I am very certain you have not a friend in the world who wishes your happiness with more sincerity than I do.'

Narcissa.

Narcissa. ‘ I believe it, my dear, and am much obliged to you ; but you would not have me tell lies to shew my gratitude.’

Marilla. ‘ Well,—well,—I shall urge you no farther, and should not have been so impertinent to take any notice of what I saw, but for the transport it gave me to imagine you might now have an opportunity of delivering yourself from the danger of being forced into a marriage with a man whom I have heard you declare so great an aversion for.’

Narcissa. ‘ And suppose the thing were really as you have taken it into your head to fancy, would you have me disoblige my father by marrying without his consent ?’

Marilla. ‘ Yes, when he will give his consent to no body but one with whom you must be miserable ;—for besides the dislike you have to the person of Oakly, his temper is such as would break a woman’s heart in two months.—You know I am very intimate with his sister, and cannot avoid seeing such oddities in his behaviour as have made me tremble for you a thousand times.’

Narcissa. ‘ I cannot think my father will ever go about to compel my inclinations.’

Marilla. ‘ Oakly is of another opinion ; for I can tell you he makes no scruple to say, that if you do not marry him you shall marry no body ;—therefore, without diving into the secrets of your heart, let me advise you, my dear creature, not to lose the short time allow’d you, but if you have any offer less disagreeable to you than Oakly, accept it at once.—three days hence it will be out of your power.’

Narcissa.

Narcissa. ' But, my dear, what man that is worth having will marry a woman without a fortune.'

Marilla. ' If I were a man I should tell you that your person was a sufficient fortune, and I do not doubt but that there are a great many who would think so ;—but you have two thousand pounds left you by your grandmother, independent of your father, and I dare say that if you were once married, and the thing past recal, he would forgive it ;—consider you are his only daughter, and both your brothers are provided for, the one by an estate, and the other by good preferment in the church.'

What answer *Narcissa* would have made I know not, it began to rain very fast, so that the ladies were oblig'd to mend their pace and make all the haste they could out of the field ; — *Marilla* took the first chair she met with, saying it would be dinner-time before she should be able to get dress'd ; — *Narcissa* and her maid ran home through the shower, and I follow'd, not only to take shelter, but also to hear the result of the young lady's determination on what had pass'd between her and capt. *Pike*.

As soon as they had pluck'd off their wet hats and capuchines, and *Narcissa* had a little resettled herself, she said to her maid,

Narcissa. ' Well, Betty,—this has been an odd morning.'

Betty. ' I hope it will prove a lucky one, madam ; but I am glad you did not tell *Marilla* any thing of the matter.'

Narcissa. ' She was so pressing that I had half a mind ; but when I considered how great she is with Oakly's sister, I thought it was better to keep her in ignorance.'

Betty.

Betty. ' Much better, indeed, madam.—But
‘ pray what do you resolve to do in relation to the
‘ Captain ? ’

Narcissa. ‘ Why I must e’en have him, I
‘ think.’

Betty. ‘ You made him a kind of promise to
‘ send to him.’

Narcissa. ‘ I did so, and will keep it ;—bring
‘ me some paper and pen, and ink,—I will write
‘ to him this moment, before any company comes
‘ in to prevent me.’

Betty. ‘ You are in the right, madam,—there
‘ is nothing like the time present.’

The things she called for being immediately set
before her, I stood at her elbow and saw her write
the following lines :

To Capt. P. I. K. E.

“ SIR,
“ I Should be guilty of an injustice both to my-
“ self and you not to be sensible of the proof
“ you offer of your sincerity ; — I find in
“ it, indeed, all that can be imagin’d, and much
“ more than could be expected, of love, of
“ honour, and a true generosity, and hope I shall
“ hereafter stand excused to my father and the
“ whole world, for taking a step excited by my
“ gratitude, and approved of by my reason ; —
“ meet me therefore to-morrow morning at eight
“ precisely, in the Piazza next King-street,
“ Covent-Garden, where I will put myself under
“ your protection, and be conducted by you to
“ whatever place you shall judge most proper for
“ the ceremony which must make me

“ Eternally yours,

“ NARCISSA.”

Having

Having seal'd this billet she gave it to her maid, with a strict charge to send it by a trusty messenger, on which the girl reply'd,

Betty. ' Yes, madam, you may depend on the safe conveyance ; for I will be the bearer of it myself.'

Narcissa. ' What,—go to a coffee-house !'

Betty. ' Nothing is more common, madam, than for women to send for gentlemen out of a coffee-house when they have any business with them.'

What farther chat passed between the mistress and maid was too insignificant to be repeated ; nor, indeed, did I stay to hear much of it, having already gain'd all that was necessary for the present, so shut up my Tablets and retir'd on the first opportunity I found for my leaving the house.

As it was plain to me, however, that Betty was deeply interested in the concession *Narcissa* had made to the Captain, and I had also some suspicion that he was not in reality the person he pretended to be, I resolv'd to go in the evening to the coffee-house, and be witness of his behaviour on receiving the letter Betty was to bring.

Accordingly I went and found him there, not as he said, in company with young officers, but sitting alone in a corner of the room with his hat very much flapp'd over his face ;—a few minutes after I came in a waiter call'd aloud to know if one *Capt. Pike* was there,—on which he started up, and, answering to the name, was told a gentlewoman at the door desir'd to speak with him ;—he went hastily out and I pursued his steps, not doubting but it was the emissary of *Narcissa* ;—as soon as he saw it was she, he cry'd out in some surprise :

Capt. Pike. ' What, sister, are you come yourself !—You bring me no bad news, I hope.'

Betty.

Betty. ' No, no, — the best you can expect ; —
 ' but walk this way, — 'tis not proper to stand here
 ' to talk. — For Heaven's sake why did you venture
 ' to appoint such a public place as this ?'

Capt. Pike. ' No body knows me here, — my
 ' Captain never uses this house. — But tell me, how
 ' goes our affair ?'

Betty. ' Rarely ; — she will have you, here is her
 ' promise under her own hand.'

By this time they were got about the middle of Scotland-yard, where Betty having given him the letter of Narcissa, he stopp'd to read it by the light of a lamp at a gentleman's door, and as soon as he had finish'd, cry'd out,

Capt. Pike. ' This is brave, indeed, and nothing
 ' sure was ever so lucky as her fixing to-morrow for
 ' our wedding, for the Captain went to Hamp-
 ' stead this morning with a whore he pick'd up in
 ' the Park the other night, and will not be in town
 ' this two days, so I shall have all that time to my-
 ' self, and can get at what cloaths and linen I
 ' want. — But, my dear sister, what shall I do with
 ' this girl when I have married her ? — where must I
 ' carry her ?'

Betty. That is what I came to talk about : —
 ' You must take a fine lodging for her by all means,
 ' and order a handsome dinner to be provided at
 ' some tavern or other ; — every thing must be done
 ' with a grand air, that she may suspect nothing
 ' 'till after you have consummated. — Hah, bro-
 ' ther.'

Capt. Pike. ' But, Betty, I have no money ;
 ' — all will go wrong still if you cannot help me
 ' out.'

Betty. Nothing would go right if it were not
 ' for me ; — you may thank God for having such a
 ' sister, you might have been a foot-soldier else as
 ' long

long as
 — I ha-
 lieve th-
 go and-
 diately.
Capt.
 — But
 writing
 jewels.
Betty.
 sue beh-
 With
 home, h-
 and deter-
 misfortun-
 end I sa-
 wrote to

" S I
 " T
 " you fr-
 " ing on
 " your
 " point
 " and is
 " in ma-
 " abject
 " affum-
 " himse-
 " sister
 " of thi-
 " prepar-
 " is the

‘ long as you live ;—but there is no time to be lost, — I have brought you four pieces, and I believe that will be sufficient for every thing ;— go and buy a ring and secure a lodging immediately.’

Capt. Pike. ‘ You may be sure I shall not fail. — But hark’ye, Betty, take care she brings the writings of her two thousand pounds and all her jewels.’

Betty. ‘ Ay, ay,—she shall leave nothing of value behind her, I’ll engage.’

With these words they separated, and I went home, heartily glad that I had made this discovery, and determin’d to save Narcissa, if possible, from the misfortune she was so near falling into, — to which end I sat down to my escrutore and immediately wrote to her father in the following terms :

To JOHN *****, Esq;

“ SIR,

“ THE shock I am now about to give you can only be excused by being done to prevent you from receiving a much greater and more lasting one :—sorry am I to tell you, — yet so it is, — your daughter, the beautiful Narcissa, is on the point of utter destruction ; — she has promised, and is resolv’d to keep her word, to join herself in marriage with a wretch, who, tho’ of the most abject rank, in order to seduce her innocence, assumes the character of a gentleman, and calls himself capt. Pike ; — Betty, her waiting-maid, is sister to the impostor, and has been the conductress of the whole villainous design ; — every thing is prepared for the accomplishment, and to-morrow is the day prefix’d ; — but I hope this intelligence

“ will

" will reach you time enough to prevent so irre-
" mediable an evil.

" I am, Sir,

" Your unknown well-wisher

" And humble servant."

Having sent this away, and fully discharg'd what my honour and conscience represented as a duty incumbent on me, I flatter'd myself with the expectation of seeing the next day treachery and deceit receive the mortification they justly merited.

C H A P. VIII.

Contains a brief account of the effects that were produced by the good intentions of the Invisible Spy, with some other subsequent particulars.

THO' I had not the least room to doubt but that the information I had given the father of Narcissa would have all the success I wish'd, yet I could not avoid being extremely curious to see in what manner the persons concern'd would behave on this occasion;—accordingly I went to the house the next morning about eleven, expecting to find that the maid had been turn'd out of doors, the mistrel in tears for her disappointment, and the old gentleman rejoicing in the thoughts of having saved his beloved daughter from undoing herself.

A servant happening to be at the door receiving some shoes from a fellow who had been just cleaning them, I gain'd an easy ~~means~~;—finding no body in the lower floor I went up stairs, but the same solitude reign'd likewise there; — I then proceeded

a story

a story higher, and there saw only a servant-maid sweeping out a room, which, by a toylet being set out, I judg'd was the chamber of Narcissa:— I was very much surprised to find every thing so quiet in a place where I had look'd for nothing but confusion, and stopp'd on the stairs to consider what might be the occasion; when on a sudden I heard the ringing of a small bell, and presently after saw a footman running hastily up; --- I follow'd him where he went, which was into the chamber of Narcissa's father, who was not yet up, but now call'd for his cloaths: --- as he was putting them on he cast his eyes on the table, and seeing a letter lie there, ask'd his man --- when, and from whom it came; --- to which he reply'd,

Footman. ‘ Sir, it was left for you last night by a porter; but as you came home so late I would not disturb you with it.’

Father. ‘ Give it me.’

I was astonish'd on finding that this was no other than the letter I had sent to him; but more troubled, that by the delivery of it being delay'd, poor Narcissa had fallen into the trap laid for her; --- but if I, a stranger, could be so much affected, what agony must rend the tender father's heart! --- scarce had he gone thro' the half of what I wrote before he cry'd out, casting at the same time a look full of despair and rage upon his servant,

Father. ‘ Ill-fated wretch! what mischief, what ruin, has thy neglect brought upon me and my family! --- You imagin'd I was drunk last night, I suppose; but had I been so, here is enough in this dreadful letter to have brought me to my senses: --- but go, --- run up to my daughter's chamber see if she be there.’

Footman. ‘ Sir she went out very early this morning.’

“ morning with Mrs. Betty, and is not yet come back.”

Father. “ Nor ever will, I fear :—the intelligence this brings me is too true, I find.—Run to Mr. Oakly and my cousin Johnson’s, bid them both come to me this instant !—fly !—and, do you hear, bring a coach with you ;—if I can recover her before consummation, her ruin may be yet prevented.”

The fellow went on his errand, and the old gentleman in the mean time stamping, biting his lips, and shewing all the marks of an inward distraction, made an end of putting on his cloaths in order to go in search of his lost daughter when the gentlemen he had sent for should arrive ; but I staid not to hear what method would be pursued for that purpose, as thinking it of no moment, and that it would be better to return again in the evening, when I might probably hear what success had attended their endeavours.

The time I chose for going, was as late at night as I thought I might get an opportunity of entering, yet the disconsolate father was but just come home,—his two friends were with him,—they said all they could to alleviate his sorrows, but it avail’d no more than preaching to the winds.—They had found out, it seems, where the marriage was perform’d ; after which they went to all the taverns, coffee-houses, and other public places which they heard were frequented by officers, to enquire concerning one who call’d himself capt. Pike, but could not receive the least information of any one who bore that name ; and all the consolation the old gentleman had for the pains he had taken, was the cruel certainty that his dear daughter was inevitably undone.

Thought
able to leave
already do-
stantly the
continued
whole mo-
as soon as

The p-
according
as the ce-
bride to
tainment
the poor
what serv-
done, in
him a pr-
was in Ir-

Her c-
some litt-
propos’d
giveness
having n-
continue-
was no
told her
for his d-
with so-
and add-
plish’d,
before h-

Narc-
eclaircif-
who ha-
go hon-
would
villainy.

Though I saw very little probability of my being able to learn any thing more at this house than I had already done yet I could not forbear calling constantly there every day, and at last, by this dint of continued application I became acquainted with the whole melancholy secret of Narcissa's fate, almost as soon as the family knew it themselves.

The pretended Captain had manag'd every thing according to the direction of his sister ; — as soon as the ceremony was over, he had conducted his bride to very handsome lodgings, where an entertainment suitable to the occasion was provided ; and the poor deluded young lady, seeing nothing but what serv'd to make her satisfied with what she had done, in return for his imaginary generosity made him a present of her two thousand pounds, which was in India Bonds.

Her contentment might, perhaps, have lasted some little time longer than it did, if she had not propos'd waiting on her father, to implore his forgiveness and blessing ; — on which the impostor, having now got his ends, thinking it needless to continue the deception any longer, confess'd that he was no more than a private man in the army ; but told her that he was now treating with his Captain for his discharge, and would purchase a commission with some part of the money she had given him ; and added, that 'till these two points were accomplish'd, it would be altogether improper to appear before her father.

Narcissa fell into the utmost distraction on this eclaircissement, — vow'd not to live with a wretch who had put so base a trick upon her, but would go home to her father, who she doubted not but would find means to punish such a flagrant piece of villainy.

He

He only laugh'd at her reproaches, and said, that as she was his wife she had it not in her choice to leave him.—Betty also now threw off the character of a fervant, and, assuming the authority of the sister of her husband, pretended to rebuke her idle prating, as she insolently term'd it,

She found an opportunity, however, of making her escape, and fled for refuge to the house of a near relation, who, on hearing her story, undertook to intercede with her father, which he did so successfully that the old gentleman forgave and took her again into favour.

All possible measures were taken to set aside the marriage, and compel the impostor to refund the money Narcissa had so unwarily bestow'd upon him; but as he knew the law was too much on his side, having not married her in a false name, tho' under a false character, he carry'd things with a very high hand, would part with nothing, not even the jewels she had left behind, but even threaten'd to commence a process against any one who detain'd her person.

In fine, all that could be done was to get him to sign articles of separation,—after which Narcissa retir'd into the country, where I hear she resolves to waste the whole remainder of her days in a melancholy contrition, for the rashness of her ungovern'd conduct.—So true, though not very elegant, are some lines which I remember to have read in an old poem, call'd, *The Card of Fancy*:

- ‘ When headstrong youth the reins of duty
‘ breaks,
- ‘ And its own course pursues in desp’rate
freaks,
- ‘ It certain mischief and destruction seeks.

I must

I must
Marilla is
as I am c
ly in love
her endea
friend had

*The Auth
self un
Prefac
sents th
nary n*

*I Have
least t
are two t
themselves
posites in
being ea
out, and
it; — th
pleas’d w
it exceed
condemn
insipid; —
every pa*

I must not forget to let my readers know that Marilla is since married to Mr. Oakly, with whom, as I am credibly inform'd, she was long passionately in love, and on that motive used the utmost of her endeavours to strengthen the aversion her fair friend had for him.

BOOK VII.

C H A P. I.

The Author, contrary to his expectation, finds himself under a necessity of making an introductory Preface to this Book and at the same time presents the Reader two letters of a pretty extraordinary nature.

I Have made it my observation, before I had the least thoughts of becoming an Author, that there are two sorts of Readers who particularly distinguish themselves from all the rest, yet, though direct opposites in humour, concur in one point,—that of being eager to see every new book that comes out, and impatient 'till they get to the conclusion of it; — the one of these affects to be above being pleas'd with any thing he meets with, especially if it exceeds the bulk of a twelve-penny pamphlet, condemning all beyond as tedious, tiresome, and insipid; — the other with alacrity pursues through every page the catastrophe of the longest work, delighting

lighting himself with the expectation of finding something to entertain him.

— Methinks I hear, on the publication of these volumes, some one of the former clas, with brow contracted and malignant sneer, like Milton's fallen Angel, mutter between his teeth, —
 “ What does the fellow mean by encumbering
 “ us with all this trash? — Who does he think
 “ will be at the pains to trudge through such a
 “ heap of rubbish? ” — While those of the other,
 cheerfully cry out at the beginning of every chapter, — ‘ I wonder what Mr. Invisible has now to
 “ present us with? ”

But as I had no design or inclination to offend the one, by spinning out these lucubrations by any superfluous interlocutions; so I will not so far dissemble, as to compliment the other with saying, that merely to oblige them I extended the work to the length it is; — much less will I go about to defend myself by the example of a certain modern writer, who has found out the method of wiredrawing whatever matter he takes in hand to such an enormous length, that the eye of remembrance loses all sight of the beginning before it has half reach'd the end.

— No, I will be ingenuous, — and confess the truth, — I was mistaken in my calculation; nor 'till the transcripts I had drawn from my Tablets were copied over fair for the press, could have imagin'd they would have employ'd so much paper and time as they in effect have done; and as I propos'd from the beginning not to conceal from the public any part of the discoveries I had made, I persisted in that resolution, without any regard to the number of volumes they might fill up.

This

This
 which I
 the latter
 which,
 as a do
 — in th
 found o
 being so
 have ta
 imagine
 to bring

That
 very w
 who rea
 to the T
 by two
 the Pri
 liberty
 from a

To the

“ M
 “ I A
 “ sc
 “ great
 “ peopl
 “ beaut
 “ fence
 “ who
 “ action
 “ what
 “ Wit
 “ body
 “ we v
 “ Vol.

This also has been the occasion, that a work which I intended should have made its appearance the latter end of last winter is postpon'd 'till now; which, as an Author, I cannot help looking upon as a double misfortune, for two very good reasons; —in the first place, the facts contain'd in it will be found of a less recent date; and in the next, by being so long in hand some particular passages in it have taken wind, and by that means those who imagine themselves concerned in them are prepar'd to bring the whole performance into contempt.

That this is no idle surmise of my own I am very well convinced, and so may every one else who reads the letters inserted in the introduction to the Third Book of the First Volume, as well as by two others which have been since left for me at the Printing-Office, and which I shall now take the liberty of presenting to the public; —the first is from a lady, and contains the following lines:

To the gentleman, or whatever he is, who calls
himself the INVISIBLE SPY.

“ Mr. INVISIBLE,

“ I Am told you are going to publish a kind of
“ scandalous Chronicle of what you, in your
“ great wisdom, may look upon as the foibles of
“ people in genteel life; and that neither birth,
“ beauty, wealth, nor power, are a sufficient de-
“ fence against so universal a satyrift.—But pray,
“ who set you up for a censor of your neighbours
“ actions?—By what rule do you pretend to judge
“ what is deserving reproof, and what is not so?—
“ Wit is the worft authority you can have, — no
“ body now a-days pays the leaft regard to it;—
“ we women like the man who dresses well, can
“ sing

“ Sing a soft Italian air, dance a French Louvre, is
 “ complaisant enough to squire us to all public
 “ places, and let us win his money at cards.—
 “ Those of your own sex also think as little of
 “ wit as we do,—they know it is no qualification
 “ by which they can expect to succeed either in
 “ love or preferment ; and therefore, you may be
 “ sure, despise in another what they are not pos-
 “ sess’d of themselves.

“ But I also hear that you declare yourself an
 “ enemy to Gaming in particular ;—and if so, you
 “ infallibly ruin yourself with the whole town.—
 “ How dull, how sluggishly would life glide
 “ on if it were not for that dear diversion ?—
 “ Dressing and Eating take up but a small part of
 “ the day, and Plays and Operas of the evening.
 “ —What must become of all our vacant hours ?
 “ —we should die by dozens of the spleen and va-
 “ pours for want of employment, if Gaming did
 “ not rouze our faculties, keep the passions in a
 “ continual flow, and the animal spirits from being
 “ subjected to the odious power of sleep and sloth.
 “ If therefore you have presumed to say any
 “ thing in opposition to this favourite amusement,
 “ erase the invective page, or depend upon it your
 “ performance will be cry’d down at every polite
 “ table, not only in town but throughout all Eng-
 “ land.—I would have you know this advice is
 “ given by one who has it in her power to be ei-
 “ ther a very serviceable friend or a most formid-
 “ able and bitter enemy ;—it is in your own choice
 “ which of these two you will make of

“ Yours, &c.

“ OLIMPIA.”

The

The other letter is from a member of the last ever memorable parliament, and was sent a few weeks before the writs were issued out for calling a new one.—These are the contents:

To the Author of the INVISIBLE SPY.

“ S I R,

“ Y O U cannot but know that a Spy, as soon as detected to be such, is condemn'd by the law of all nations to be carry'd to the first tree and hang'd up immediately.—What then, in the name of common sense, can have induced you to assume a character so obnoxious to mankind, and so dangerous to yourself?—Do you imagine that the natural love people have for intelligence will save you?—no,—if you offend all, you must expect that all will be against you; —but I am charitable enough to hope otherwise, and would fain think you concern yourself only with matters relating to the tea-table and toylet of the ladies, and are more discreet than to meddle with things which ought not to come too much into the heads of the populace.

“ You understand me, I suppose;—but left you should not, I will tell you that I should be sorry to find you a dabbler in politics, especially at this critical juncture, when the Parliament is so near being dissolved and a new Election coming on.

“ I have the honour to be a member of the lower house, and am very sensible that some motions have been made there, which at the time were highly displeasing to the mob; but as most of them seem to be now forgot, and others die away apace, I would not have you

“ scratch an old sore and revive the memory of
“ them.

“ The Naturalization Bill most of all sticks in
“ the stomachs of the vulgar ;—but as I take you
“ for a gentleman and a man of sense, I will rea-
“ son with you a little upon that affair, and doubt
“ not but to convince you that there never was a
“ Bill better calculated for the true interest of the
“ country, and to make us a great and formidable
“ people.

“ I shall not need to tire your patience with say-
“ ing much on the occasion,—the whole sum of
“ this argument, conclusive as it is, may be drawn
“ up in a very narrow compass,—as thus :

“ Are we not told, in that book which is the
“ rule of our salvation, that we ought to do all
“ the good we can ?—Is there any thing more plea-
“ sing in the sight of God and the world than acts
“ of hospitality, benevolence and charity ?—And
“ can we give a greater proof how much we are
“ endow'd with those noble virtues, than by re-
“ ceiving distress'd strangers into the bosom of our
“ community, and making them partakers of the
“ same rights and privileges that we ourselves en-
“ joy ?—This consideration alone would be suffici-
“ ent to make me, as a good Christian, a zealous
“ advocate for a General Naturalization, without
“ any limitation or exception, whether in regard
“ of Turks, Pagans, Jews, or Atheists.

“ There are also two other motives which, in
“ my opinion, should make every good common-
“ wealth's man and good subject wish that this
“ bill might be pass'd into a law,—as I shall pre-
“ fently make appear.

“ First, It must be allow'd that the people of
“ England are, of latter years, extremely indolent ;
“ —that the meaner sort of them are lazy, proud,
“ and who don't believe in God, and in honest and

“ and luxurious, to an excess, chusing rather to
“ steal or beg, than work for moderate wages ;
“ —whereas on the contrary, those who it may
“ be suppos'd will come over to take the benefit
“ of such an act are robust in body and humble in
“ mind,—inur'd from their very infancy to want
“ and toil, and accustom'd to hardships, will cer-
“ tainly be glad to sell their labour at a much
“ cheaper rate :—their women may also be an ex-
“ ample to ours, and make them less delicate and
“ more obedient ; — and how great a blessing
“ such a reformation would be, as the sex at pre-
“ sent conduct themselves, I appeal to all fathers,
“ husbands, and masters of families.

“ Secondly, We want men,—we may want
“ soldiers too, things least expected often happen ;
“ we cannot assure ourselves that the young Pre-
“ tender may not quit his lurking holes, and once
“ more attempt to disturb us ; but if all appre-
“ hensions on his score were without foundation,
“ and that as the greatest part of his adherents are
“ destroy'd either by the sword or the halter, all
“ his hopes and endeavours were buried with them ;
“ —nay, were the small remains of that family
“ extinct, yet still there never would be wanting a
“ Pretender to the Throne of these Kingdoms ;—
“ we all know the late King of Sardinia, as next of
“ blood, enter'd his claim in a Protest against the
“ Settlement of the House of Hanover, and we have
“ no room to think his son would be more passive, if
“ such an opportunity should arrive ;—never can
“ we flatter ourselves with being absolutely secure
“ that no other dangers may threaten us from a
“ different quarter.

“ All these things consider'd, I think it very
“ evident, and you cannot but acknowledge that a
“ General Naturalization would not only be greater

“ ly for our honour and convenience, but is also
“ necessary for our safety.

“ However, as I have before observ'd, the lower
“ class of people having taken it into their heads to
“ imagine that this bill, and several others, were
“ so many attempts to encroach on what they look
“ upon as their undoubted rights and privileges, I
“ should be glad that no mention was made con-
“ cerning any part of the business transacted in this
“ Parliament; because I am pretty sensible that
“ there are some rustical clodpated fellows who
“ capable, on the least encouragement from the
“ pres', to insult and throw dirt in our faces, in-
“ stead of giving us their votes.

“ I should have accompany'd this request with
“ a small present, but really, as things stand, I
“ find all the ready money I can raise will be little
“ enough to stem the torrent of popular resent-
“ ment; but if you think fit to comply, I shall
“ take an opportunity hereafter to testify my grati-
“ tude, and be ready to prove myself,

“ On all occasions,

“ S I R,

“ Your much obliged

“ Humble servant,

“ PHILOTEMPO.”

The letter of Philotempo had not been inserted without a reply to it, if these Volumes had been published at the time I first intended; but as the Election will be over long before they can possibly make their appearance, and it is likely he may be
rechosen,

rechosen, what I would then have said would now, for many reasons, be highly improper.

I must therefore submit to whatever censures either he or any other person shall think fit to pass upon me,—well knowing that to those who are resolved to be offended, all apologies would be in vain, and to those who read with a desire of being pleased, equally unnecessary.

Some, whose impatient thirst for intelligence is not easily satisfied, may perhaps think that in an age so gay, so luxurious at the present, when every day, nay every hour, teems with some fresh adventure, and affords matter for conversation, I might have made a more extensive use of my gift of Invisibility, and that not two, but twenty-two Volumes might have been well enough employ'd in the rehearsal of what I had seen and heard;—but those, if any such there are, will find in the close of this work, that if I have omitted many things which doubtless have happen'd worthy remark, it has not been owing to any remissness in me, or a weariness of prosecuting my enquiries, but to an unlucky accident which stopp'd me in my full career, and cut off all farther opportunities of obliging either them or myself.

As this is the last address I shall make to the public, at least while I continue to wear my Belt of Invisibility, I think myself obliged, in good manners, to take my leave, not only of the courteous but also uncourteous reader,—which I now do,—heartily wishing that the one may find in this performance every thing capable of entertaining him, and that the other may be preserved from falling into the spleen or hypochondriac, by discharging on me all the ill-nature he is possess'd of.

Ylditnoz aso yerd siolod gool rovo od illw
ed usky en ylalit si nbas coonseccqas jn
cefforqas

C H A P. II.

The Author flatters himself will be no unacceptable present to all those of the fair sex, who are either truly innocent, or would preserve the reputation of being so.

WHEN a young woman, of what rank or degree soever, indulges herself in a too great freedom of conversation with one of a loose and wanton behaviour, she cannot wonder that those who are witnesses of their intimacy should suspect her guilty of the same inclinations;—and that tho' perfectly innocent of the faults of her companion, is made an equal partaker of her shame.

Women, who are either born to, or are reduced by accidents to low and indigent circumstances, excuse themselves by saying,—that the necessity of their affairs compels them to keep an acquaintance with persons who they find it their interest to oblige;—but if this be an insufficient pretence, as certainly it is, since there is no interest which ought to be put in competition with reputation, what can be alledg'd in behalf of ladies of fortune and quality, who have it in their power to chuse their company, and it cannot be supposed would converse with any whose manners they did not approve?

In fine, there is no one error in conduct which, according to my opinion, the sex in general should be more upon their guard against than this;—for tho' some, dazzled with the pomp of show and equipage, may be weak enough to imagine, that to appear in public, or be known to have an intimacy with a woman of a polluted fame, pro-

vided

vided she
blemish-
judice to
extreme
demonstr

First,
more file
such occ
man, w
honour,
convertie
be thoug
stitute of
rather h
may be
ness whi
conspicu

But th
nocent p
a bad w
able auth
out bein
more ev
part of i
fight; b
bare rep
itself to
der, and
I will n
mind is
tion, ye
will be f
I kno
would fa
a Virgin
ploded;
unhappi

vided she be a person of condition, will bring no blemish on their own characters, or be of any prejudice to their morals, yet that such an intimacy is extremely dangerous to both may be very easily demonstrated.

First, as to character;—If the world should be more silent than it ever was, or ever will be on such occasions, it cannot be expected that a woman, who has thrown off all regard for her own honour, should have any for that of the person she converses with, or would even wish they should be thought possess'd of a virtue she is entirely destitute of herself;—no,—on the contrary, she will rather have recourse to all the wicked artifices she may be mistress of to cast a shade over that brightness which would render her own deformity more conspicuous.

But this is not the worst danger to which an innocent person is exposed by keeping company with a bad woman;—we are told, from an unquestionable authority, that it is hard to touch pitch without being defiled;—and certainly there is nothing more evident, than that vice naturally loses great part of its horrors by becoming familiar to the sight;—the chaste heart, which shudders at the bare repetition of indecent actions, by accustoming itself to be witness of them, ceases first to wonder, and by degrees to detest them;—and though I will not be so uncharitable as to say, that the mind is always corrupted by such a communication, yet I will venture to affirm, that the manners will be so.

I know very well, that the timid modesty I would fain recommend, as the surest guardian of a Virgin's honour, has for many years been exploded; and that since some foreign customs have unhappily been introduced among us, to be capable

of blushing is look'd upon by those who pass for models of politeness, as an indication of the want both of wit and good breeding.

This audacity of behaviour being so much the mode, it is not a little difficult to distinguish between those who really pursue the dictates of a licentious inclination, and those who put on a shew of it merely to comply with the example of others; and a person who judges of a woman by what he sees of her in public, runs a very great risque of being mistaken.

Often has my opinion been laid astray in this point, even in regard of ladies with whom I was most intimately acquainted, and saw every day; nor did I ever dare to give a character of any one of them 'till my Belt of Invisibility afforded me an opportunity of prying into the secrets of the alcove.

Corisca and Emilia are two celebrated beauties, —they are almost equally follow'd and admit'd by the men; but neither of them were ever jealous or envious of the praises given to the other, and there was once so excessive a fondness between them that they were scarce ever seen asunder:—Corisca has been married some years,—Emilia has not yet been prevail'd upon to part with her liberty; but tho' there is this difference in their circumstances, there has been too much appearance, upon exact similitude, in their humours and constitutions;—I say in appearance; for I have since discover'd that light and darkness are not in fact, more widely distant.

Corisca, long before she became a wife, was look'd upon as what they call a female rake;—some there were, however, who imputed what she did only to the too great vivacity of her humour, and would not believe her guilty of any real crime; but

but far the
opinion
of her
tempt
frequent
too much
either or

Yet n
somethin
behaviour
always
visited b
but of t
to seem
the plea

It is,
a woman
every qu
able col
of princ
fine tale
the fou
a pleasi
shame.

The
wit,—h
the dar
with an
risca, an
or a lo
selves pr
stronger
might p
commun
said to l
to beco
early an

but far the greater number were of a quite different opinion ; and, indeed, the little regard she takes of her family since her marriage,—the public contempt with which she treats her husband, and the frequent quarrels she has with him in private, but too much justify the worst character can be given either of her economy or her chastity.

Yet notwithstanding all this, there is a certain something in her air, her wit, and her manner of behaviour so engaging to both sexes, that she has always been, and still continues to be constantly visited by persons not only of the best fortunes, but of the best reputations also, who chuse rather to seem blind to her faults than deny themselves the pleasure of her conversation.

It is, beyond all dispute, a very great pity that a woman so plenteously endow'd by nature with every qualification to shew virtue in its most amiable colours, should, through a strange depravity of principles and inclination, make use of all the fine talents she is mistress of only to varnish over the foul face of vice, and endeavouring to give a pleasing aspect to the deformity of sin and shame.

The beautiful person of Emilia,—her sprightly wit,—her good humour and affability, render'd her the darling of all who knew her ;—they beheld with an infinity of concern her intimacy with Corisca, and those, who either by proximity of blood, or a long acquaintance with her, thought themselves privileged to offer their advice, did it in the strongest terms, and spared no remonstrances that might prevail on her to break off so dangerous a communication ;—but she was deaf to all could be said to her on this subject :—it was her misfortune to become the mistress of her own actions at too early an age ;—what fortune she was posseſt of

was

was in her own hands, and as she was entirely independent on her friends, would not submit to be directed by them.

In justice to this young lady's character, however, I must say, and shall hereafter prove, that there is a fund of honour and virtue in her soul sufficient to have made her look down with contempt and detestation on the conduct of Corisca, and to have oblig'd her, if not to break off all conversation with her, at least not to appear with her in public, or make one in any party of pleasure where she was engaged.

But, alas ! the seeds of those noble principles for a time lay dormant in her, choak'd up with the natural levities of youth, and the modish excesses of the age, they had not power to shoot forth into action :—innocently wanton, and indolently gay, she saw not the danger to which she exposed her person and reputation, because she thought not of it, nor gave herself the pains to examine what snares might possibly be spread for her ;—but suffering herself to be continually hurried from one amusement to another, never consider'd or reflected on any thing farther than the present satisfaction.

I have been thus particular in describing the character and humour of Emilia, because in the course of my rambles I have found too many others of the same giddy bent, who, without the least propensity to ill, have heedlessly run into actions which have involved their whole future lives in dishonour :—these have reason to pardon this digression, especially as it has not been tedious, and I shall now return to the adventure which occasion'd it.

Among the many Invisible Visits, which for a considerable time together I had made to the apartment

ment

there on
were wi
a very a
the wor
gay and
strain'd
person,
tempting
visits he

The
first bro
of too
blets fo
tion of
Emilia,

The
Corisca
thus :

Corisca
goodn
expec
Emilia
you v
so disa
but ju
the pl
whole
Corisca
Emilia
have b
it int
house
stared
and
this n

18962

ment of this celebrated Corisca, I happen'd to be there one morning when Favonius and Palamede were with her;—the first of these gentlemen is of a very amorous inclination, and known to be what the world calls well with her;—the other, though gay and lively as Mercury himself, has been restrain'd either through want of inclination to her person, or his friendship to Favonius, from attempting to take any private liberties, and seldom visits her but in his company.

The discourse they were engaged in, when I first broke in upon them, I found was on subjects of too trifling a nature for me to spread my Tablets for the reception, so I shall make no repetition of any things were said 'till the entrance of Emilia, who came in soon after.

The first salutations were no sooner over, than Corisca taking her fondly by the hand spoke thus :

Corisca. ‘ Dear creature, this is an excess of goodness in you to come thus early,—I did not expect you 'till dinner time.’

Emilia. ‘ Indeed, my dear, I never waited on you with so ill a will, nor came on an errand so disagreeable to my inclinations; for I have but just time to tell you, that I am deprived of the pleasure I proposed to myself of passing the whole day with you.’

Corisca. ‘ On what occasion?’

Emilia. ‘ The most unlucky one that could have happen'd;—an old aunt of mine has taken it into her head to quit her Rookery and Hen-house in the country, and come to stare and be stared at in town;—she arriv'd last night, and sent me word that she must needs see me this morning;—decency obliges me to go,—

‘ she is my god-mother, and besides is pretty rich.’

Corisca. ‘ But cannot you make some excuse to leave her as soon as you have paid your compliments? — I shall have all the world here this afternoon, and would not have you absent upon any score.’

Emilia. ‘ It cannot be avoided,—she pretends to have a huge fondness for me, and I know will detain me, with a thousand impertinent declarations of it, ’till bed time;—so, my dear, adieu for this whole tedious day;—to-morrow, I hope, will atone for this vexation.—Gentlemen, your servant.’

In speaking these last words she turn’d upon her heel and ran out of the room; but not so hastily but that Palamede, with one stride, join’d her at the door and led her down stairs;—in the mean time *Corisca*, looking on *Favonius*, said to him:

Corisca. ‘ I pity poor *Emilia*;—the impertinent fondness of an old relation is almost as great a mortification as the sawcy indifference of a young fellow that one likes.’

Favonius. ‘ The beautiful *Corisca*, I am sure, can never be in danger of experiencing the latter of these vexations.’

To prove the sincerity of this asseveration he closed it with a strenuous embrace, which *Corisca* return’d;—there was time for no more,—Palamede came back, and *Favonius*, with a smile, spoke in this manner:

Favonius. ‘ By the sparkle in your eyes, Palamede, I should imagine the piece of gallantry you have shew’d to *Emilia* has been more than ordinarily well received.’

June 1812. Edited from the original copy of *Palamede* ed.

Palam
 in my
 trifling
 Favon
 port to
 dam, I
 despera
 Corisc
 charge
 Palam
 not ab
 an ext
 luscious
 Corisc
 ing yo
 Palam
 the tr
 terms
 circum
 choice
 Emili
 Favon
 Palam
 solute
 enable
 certain
 like b
 Corisc
 Emili
 from
 Palam
 dam.
 Corisc
 believ
 but w
 nour,
 Do y

Palamede. ‘ This and all others I have yet had in my power to treat that lady with have been too trifling to deserve much notice from her.’

Favonius. ‘ Oh,—every kind glance gives transport to a man in love;—you must know, madam, I have just found out that Palamede is most desperately in love with Emilia.’

Corisca. ‘ Indeed!—and do you allow the charge, Palamede?’

Palamede. ‘ Not altogether, madam,—I am not absolutely in love, but confess I think Emilia an extreme fine girl, and have had some very luscious dreams on her account.’

Corisca. ‘ What hinders you then from making your addresses to her?’

Palamede. ‘ Why faith, madam,—to confess the truth, I was afraid of not succeeding on the terms I wish’d to do; and as for marriage, the circumstances of my estate require I should make choice of a wife with a much larger fortune than Emilia is possess’d of.’

Favonius. ‘ You are perfectly in the right, Palamede;—a good fortune with a wife is absolutely necessary for a man of pleasure, as it enables him to make handsome presents and entertainments to those women he may happen to like better.’

Corisca. ‘ So, Palamede, you durst not ask Emilia the question, for fear of meeting a rebuff from her over-scrupulous virtue?’

Palamede. ‘ That is indeed the case, madam.’

Corisca. ‘ Then you are a fool:—not but I believe Emilia is perfectly innocent as yet;—but what is innocence, what is virtue, what is honour, when oppos’d to love and inclination!—Do you not know what mrs. Behn, who must be

‘ be allow’d to be a perfect judge of nature in
‘ our sex, says upon this occasion ?

Oh cursed honour, thou who first didst damn
A woman to the sin of shame !
Honour, who taught lovely eyes the art,
To wound, and not to cure the heart ;
With love t’invite, but to forbid with awe,
And to themselves prescribe a cruel law.
His chief attributes are pride and spight,
His pow’r in robbing lovers of delight.
Honour, that puts our words, that should be free,
Into a set formality !

Thou base debaucher of the gen’rous heart,
That teachest all our looks and actions art.

What love design’d a sacred gift,
What nature made to be posses’d,
Mistaken honour made a theft.

Thou foe to pleasure, nature’s worst disease !

Thou tyrant over mighty kings,
Be gone to princes palaces,
But let the humble swain go on,
In the blest paths of the first race of man,

That nearest were to Gods allied,
And, form’d for love, disdain’d all other pride.

The emphatic accents and graceful manner with
which Corisca pronounced these lines, adding to
the beauty of the poetry, struck so much upon
the hearts of the two gentlemen, that they could
not forbear clapping their hands, and crying out
several times, ‘ Encore, — Encore, charming Co-
‘ risca.’ — On which she laugh’d heartily, and re-
ply’d,

Corisca. ‘ I want none of these theatrical testi-
monies of approbation ; — I would only convince
Palamede, from the unquestionable authority of
our

our English Sappho, that when a woman loves, no considerations are of force to restrain her from acting up to the dictates of her passion.'

Palamede. ' Ay, madam, if I could flatter myself with the hopes of being lov'd by Emilia, I should have nothing to apprehend.'

Corisca. ' I will not pretend to tell you that she is so much in love as not to be able to eat, drink, or sleep for the thoughts of you ; but I have heard her say a thousand times over, I believe, that you are, without exception, the prettiest fellow in the whole town,—that you dress the best, — and have something peculiarly agreeable in your air and manner of behaviour ; —and on the strength of this, and some other indications I have observed about her, I dare venture to affirm that you are far from being indifferent to her, and that she would be little less pleas'd than yourself with an opportunity of being entertain'd by you in private.'

Palamede. ' Dear madam, you make me the most transported man alive.—But by what means can such a thing be brought about ?—some scheme must be laid for that purpose.'

Corisca. ' Nothing more easy ;—I have it all in my head already ;—she will go any where with me ;—we shall be together to-morrow ;—you two shall come in as if by accident, and propose going to take the air on the other side of the water ;—there is a house the most commodiously situated that can be ;—good gardens, good wine, good beds, good every thing : — Favonius is well acquainted with the place.'

Favonius. ' I suppose you mean that kept by mrs. *****'

Corisca.

Corisca. ‘ The same.—When we have been
there some time, and it begins to draw near the
hour proper to think of going home, you shall
discharge the coach, and pretend the fellow got
drunk and went away without your knowledge ;
—there will be no possibility of procuring a
vehicle to bring us to town, especially at night ;
—Favonius must be content to do penance with
me in loitering about the gardens, or in some-
thing or other, ’till morning, while you make
the most of your time with Emilia.’

Palamede. ‘ Excellent,—my charming Ma-
chiavel !—But how shall we prevail on Emilia to
be separated from her dear *Corisca* ?

Corisca. ‘ Leave that to my management ;—
she shall suspect nothing of the matter ’till she
finds herself alone with you,—and then it will be
your business to make her satisfied with being so.’

Palamede. ‘ Kind creature, — where shall I
find words to thank this compassion to a suffering
lover ?’

Corisca. ‘ Never trouble yourself about banks,
—good actions, they say, reward themselves.’

Favonius. ‘ As for my part, I shall defer those
acknowledgments which your excess of goodness
demands from me, both on my own score and
that of my friend, ’till to-morrow night, when
they shall make part of that agreeable penance I
am to perform.’

This speech of Favonius paved the way for a conversation conformable enough to the characters of the persons engag’d in it ; but I am certain would not be well relish’d by that part of my readers which I am most ambitious of obliging ;—I shall therefore close the scene, as indeed I did soon after my Tablets, and quitted the apartments of this fair libertine, in order to retire to my own, and

and conte-
heard.

Presents
adventu-
ginning
p:ct.

T H C
qua-
of Corisca
licentious
I could n
with the e
base enou
ment of c
of a young
ship as is
racter,—
old poet,
casion sim
short 151
‘ Virtu
‘ Each

In rum-
on what
confess I
advantage
had in re-
man, and
bring abo
done not
two y
one

and contemplate at leisure on what I had seen and heard.

CHAP. III.

Presents the reader with the catastrophe of an adventure very different from what the beginning may have given him reason to expect.

THO' I had thought myself too well acquainted with the principles and inclinations of Corisca, to be at all surprised at any act of licentiousness she could possibly be guilty of, yet I could not defend my senses from being seiz'd with the extremest shock, on finding she could be base enough to condescend to become the instrument of others pleasures, and betray the innocence of a young lady for whom she had as much friendship as is consistent with a woman of her character,—forgetting all this while what the good old poet, Mr. Philip Massenger, tell us on an occasion similar to this of Corisca and Emilia.

“ Virtue and Vice in one sole point agree,
“ Each would be glad all like themselves might
“ be.”

In ruminating very wisely, as I then imagined, on what Corisca had said to Palamede, I must confess I entertained suspicions not at all to the advantage of poor Emilia;—I fancied that she had in reality confess'd a passion for that gentleman, and Corisca, in forming this contrivance to bring about a private interview between them, had done nothing but what she was convinced in her own

own mind would be highly satisfactory to her fair friend.

It was never my custom, however, to place an entire dependence on conjecture, whether of my own or that of another person, so resolved to be as convinced as my invisible inspection could make me.

Accordingly the next day in the afternoon I girded on my precious Belt and went to the house of Corisca;—Emilia was not yet come, but just as I arrived, I heard her give orders to refuse admittance to all of her own sex except that lady, and also to all those of the other except Favonius and Palamede.

As I doubted not but I should be able to fathom the whole truth of this affair, by the conversation that would pass between these two ladies while they believed themselves alone altogether, I was extremely impatient for the approach of Emilia, and equally rejoiced when I saw her enter.

The first salutations they gave each other were such as might be expected from persons who mutually profess'd so warm and tender a friendship;—the subjects they afterwards talk'd upon were not of any consequence;—not one word of Palamede nor the projected tour was mentioned, —on which I absolved Emilia from all blame on this account, and was sorry I had ever wrong'd her.

But the less room I had to condemn, the greater cause I had to pity her, and to detest the cruel plot contrived, and so near being put in execution against her virtue; but I had no time to indulge meditation,—the gentlemen presently came in,—the proposal, as agreed upon between them and Corisca, was immediately made,—the ladies gave a ready assent,—a hackney-coach was order'd

to be call'd
qually on th

The read
being easy t
was no occ
tion to it,
most gratifi
ferent way
and could r
would reser
she should
conduct the

It was r
house they
I had hear
but also by
concerning
no sooner
than I had
best of m
there befor
trance,—
a well-fu
were ushe

Wine a
and the co
with this
which I f
into parte
have imag
mede ha
promena
her with
with not
have littl
face.

to be call'd to the door, and every one seem'd equally on the wing to be gone.

The reader will now perhaps imagine, that it being easy to see into the end of this affair, there was no occasion for any farther enquiries in relation to it, and that curiosity had received its utmost gratification ;—but I happen'd to be of a different way of thinking,—I sincerely pitied Emilia, and could not help being desirous to see how she would resent the base artifice practised on her when she should discover it, and also how Corisca would conduct the plot she had contrived.

It was no difficult matter for me to know the house they were going to, both by the description I had heard given of it the day before by Corisca, but also by what I had been told by other people concerning its commodiousness for intrigue, so I no sooner found a hackney-coach was order'd, than I hastily quitted the post I was in,—made the best of my way to the place of rendezvous,—got there before them,—took up my stand at the entrance,—saw them alight, and follow'd them into a well-furnish'd spacious room, to which they were usher'd by a spruce waiter.

Wine and biscuits were immediately served up, and the company, after having refresh'd themselves with this little regale, went to walk in the gardens, which I found indeed very pleasant,—well laid out into parterres and knots, and larger than I could have imagined ;—Favonius led Corisca, and Palamede had Emilia by the hand, who, during this promenade, took the opportunity of entertaining her with many tender speeches, but intermixed with nothing that the most chaste ear might not have listen'd to without calling a blush upon the face.

I was

I was sorry, however, to observe that she received what he said with a certain languishment in her eyes which embolden'd him to go on, and made me fear that he had indeed a secret ascendancy over her uncautious, unsuspecting heart.

On their return into the house a table was spread with every thing that could excite the appetite or exhilarate the spirits ;—the cheerfulness and good humour of the guests gave a double relish to the repast,—wit and sparkling champaign crown'd the board ; and tho' the ladies allay'd the too great potency of the one by the assistance of water, yet the other flow'd with no less strength and vigour.

After some hours had been pass'd in the height of gaiety, Corisca on a sudden look'd upon her watch, and assuming a more serious air than she was accustom'd to wear, told the company that it was near one o'clock, and they must think of departing for London ; — to which Favonius reply'd,

Favonius. ‘ Among all the ridiculous things mankind was ever guilty of, I know none more so than the having let their wits to work to invent a machine, and then submitting to be govern'd by it.’

Corisca. ‘ There are many other laws, as well as this, by which the silly world have bound themselves to go contrary to the primitive rules of nature and inclination,—indulging by stealth only those pleasures which they were born freely to enjoy ; but, however, all these customs, disagreeable as they are to people of real wit and spirit, must in some measure be comply'd with, or the stupid vulgar would presently accuse us of irregularity and indecency.’

Palamede.

Falan
‘ dam,
‘ I will
‘ on tha
‘ well a
‘ to det
‘ think p
Emilia
‘ believ
‘ longer
‘ add to
Favon
‘ farther
‘ justly b
‘ some
‘ mand,

In spe
room wi
discharge
minutes
their face
ving got
away foo
Corisca a
milia bei
same tim

Corisca
‘ ever ha
Emilia
‘ home !
Palam
‘ is a thin
‘ quired,
‘ either
‘ carriag
‘ lo, lad
‘ being o

Palamede. ‘ I look upon every one here, madam, to be above the censures of the vulgar, yet I will not pretend to enter into any arguments on that head; and dare answer for Favonius, as well as for myself, that he would not presume to detain you a moment beyond the time you think proper to go.’

Emilia. ‘ Indeed, gentlemen, I think, and I believe Corisca does so too, that to stay any longer at this time would rather diminish than add to the satisfaction we have hitherto enjoy’d.’

Favonius. ‘ After such a declaration, madam, any farther pressures to the contrary on our part, might justly be look’d upon as impertinent and troublesome:—it is certainly your province to command,—ours implicitly to obey.’

In speaking these last words, he went out of the room with Palamede, as it might be supposed to discharge the reckoning of the house: but in a few minutes return’d, and with a seeming concern in their faces said,—that the coachman, either by having got drunk or mistaking his orders, had gone away soon after he had set them down:—on which Corisca affected to be extremely surprised, and Emilia being really so, they both cry’d out at the same time,

Corisca. ‘ this is the oddest accident sure that ever happen’d.’

Emilia. ‘ Bless me!—which way shall we get home!

Palamede. ‘ As for going home, madam, it is a thing quite out of the question; we have enquired, and there is no possibility of procuring either coach, chariot, post chaise, or any sort of carriage whatever, ’till the morning breaks:—so, ladies, you must content yourselves with being our guests for the remainder of the night.’

Corisca.

Corisca. ‘ Well, since it is so we must e’en make a virtue of necessity, and divert ourselves as well as we can.’

Palamede. ‘ It would be an unpardonable vanity in us, madam, to imagine that any thing in our conversation could compensate for the want of your repose;—we will therefore order a bed to be got ready for you two ladies, while Favonius and myself watch the approach of day, in order to provide a vehicle for carrying us to town.’

Corisca. ‘ No, no,—by no means,—we will all share the same fate; it would be strange indeed, if four people of taste and spirit could not find some way to amuse each other for the space of one night.’

While she was speaking a Concert of Flutes, a Hautboy, a Double-Curtal, and some other wind music, on a sudden saluted their ears,—on which she cry’d out,

Corisca. ‘ Hark!—music!—if it continues it will very well atone for the loss of a few hours sleep.’

Emilia. ‘ Nothing ever happen’d so fortunately for me;—I love music as I love my life, especially of this sort.’

In speaking this she ran hastily to the window and threw up the sash, in order to hear the several instruments more distinctly;—Palamede follow’d, and they both seem’d absorb’d in a most profound attention for some minutes, which Favonius and Corisca observing, took that opportunity of passing softly behind them and slipp’d out of the room.

Emilia turning her head presently after, with a design, as I suppose, to say something either to the one or the other, was surprised at seeing

ing neit
mede,
Emili
nius :
Palan
they a
to the
lower
Emili
us, h
them.
Palan
but fi
which
long l
Emili
have v
note c
Palan
pinion,
whole
soul’s
Emili
I shall
rejoin
It is n
manner i
sincerity
was hear
milia an
deed ha
posed, th
ed by Pa
ceive he
The d
ever, cou
— Palam
VOL.

ing neither of them there, and cry'd out to Palamede,

Emilia. ‘ Bless me !—what is become of Favonius and Corisca ?

Palamede. ‘ I know not, madam ;—perhaps they are gone down into the garden, to be nearer to the music, which seems proceed from the lower end of the walk.’

Emilia. ‘ Very likely ;—they might have told us, however ;—but since it is so we will follow them.’

Palamede. ‘ With all my heart, madam ;—but first permit me to reveal a secret to you which you ought to be told, and my breast has long labour'd with an impatience of discovering.’

Emilia. ‘ A secret !—What secret can you have with me that would be worth losing one note of this heavenly music to listen to !’

Palamede. ‘ I hope you will be of another opinion, madam, when I shall tell you that the whole happiness of my future life, and even my soul's eternal peace, depends upon it.’

Emilia. ‘ You may tell me what you will, but I shall believe nothing of the matter ;—so let us rejoin our friends.’

It is not so much by what people say, as by the manner in which they deliver themselves, that the sincerity of their words may be guess'd at ; and I was heartily glad to find, both by the looks of Emilia and the tone of her voice, that she indeed had more inclination to do as she had proposed, than to stay and suffer herself to be entertained by Palamede in the way she might easily perceive he was about to do it.

The discreet intentions of this young lady, however, could avail her but little in her present situation ;—Palamede got between her and the door as she

was endeavouring to go out, and throwing himself upon his knees before her, and at the same time catching fast hold of both her hands, said to her,

Palamede. ‘ No, charming Emilia, I have not so long languished for an opportunity like this to let it now escape me!—you must,—you shall hear me.—By Heaven I love you!—love you to the most raging height the passion can inspire!—For many, many tedious weeks, you have been the only object of my nightly visions and waking thoughts,—and—’

He was going on, but Emilia interrupted him by replying in these terms, accompanied with an air full of resentment and confusion.

Emilia. ‘ Fye, Palamede, this railery is impertinent and insipid,—and what I could not have expected to be treated with by a person who has the character of good sense and breeding.’

Palamede. ‘ Cruelly urged:—oh could you see into my heart you would find it all devoted to you!—devoted to you with a tenderness so perfect as can be equal’d by nothing but the charms that have subdued it.—Frown not, adorable Emilia, nor struggle to get loose; for by all my hopes, never will I quit the grasp I have taken of you, nor rise from the posture I am in, till I have convinced you of the sincerity, as well as ardency, of the flame you have kindled in me.’

Emilia. ‘ Sir, this nocturnal declaration is little consistent with that respect which is always the attendant of an honourable passion.—If you had, indeed, any thoughts of me of the nature you pretend, I am no recluse, and you might have found a more proper season to acquaint me with them.’

Palamede.

Palamede. ‘ The passion I am inflamed with, is not of a nature to submit to the dull terms observed by vulgar lovers.—Besides, what season can be more fit for love than night, the friend of love?—Turn your eyes towards the window and behold the silver moon, with all the thousand twinkling stars; see how sweet, how mild they shine, with what benevolent aspects they dart their rays upon us;—listen to the melodious sounds you just now prais’d;—will not all these soften your soul,—melt you into pity, and make you think such love as mine deserves some recompence?’

Emilia. ‘ I’ll hear no more;—unband me, sir, and give me liberty to seek our friends;—or be assured my cries shall raise the house.’

He then let go her hands and rose from the posture he had been in; but still kept his back close against the door, while with a half smile, he reply’d to what she had said in this manner:

Palamede. ‘ Madam, you are obey’d in part, and if I acquiesce to every thing you demand, it is not to be imagin’d that you would be one jot less in my power than now;—our friends are too deeply engaged with each other to suffer themselves to be interrupted; and as to the people of the house they know their distance, and are always extremely deaf on these occasions.’

On hearing him speak thus she burst into a flood of Tears, and throwing herself into a chair, cry’d out,

Emilia. ‘ Oh heavens!—is this possible!—can Conisca be so vile! — am I betray’d! — basely given up by her to infamy and ruin?’

On hearing her make this exclamation, he left the place where he had been standing and seated himself near her, — then taking one of her han’s

and pressing it tenderly to his lips, spoke to this effect:

Palamede. ‘ Not so, my angel! — by heaven, ‘ the transactions of this night shall be for ever a ‘ sacred and inviolable secret! — not even Favonius ‘ nor Corisca shall be acquainted with it if you de- ‘ sire the contrary; — I know they will laugh at me, ‘ but no matter, — I can bear all that, and much ‘ more, to comply with the least request made by ‘ my dear Emilia; oh then be kind, and bless my ‘ longing wishes! — let no reluctance damp the ‘ coming joys, but yield to share the happiness you ‘ give! ’

The consternation of Emilia, on finding she was exposed to the dangers she now was in, by the very woman whom she most had loved, and most believed her friend had thrown her into so profound a misery, that I much question whether she heard any part of what Palamede had lately been speaking to her, ‘till closing his protestations with a strenuous embrace, she started up, broke from him, and looking wildly round the room she spy’d two swords, which Favonius and Palamede had pluck’d off on their entrance and put in a window, — she snatch’d up one of them, and drawing it out of the scabbard in an instant, held the point to her breast saying at the same time,

Emilia. ‘ Here is at least a refuge from dishonour; — that base woman, who thought to make ‘ me as vile as I now find she is herself, shall meet ‘ with a disappointment she perhaps does not ex- ‘ pect; — if you offer to approach me, or advance ‘ one step beyond the spot you stand upon, this ‘ goes into my heart! ’

The amazement, — the shock, the confusion Palamede was in at this action is altogether impossible to describe; — her words, — her looks, — her voice,

voice,—convincing him she was indeed in earnest, he remain'd speechless, — without motion, — his eyes fix'd on her in a kind of stupid stare, and seem'd like one transfix'd with thunder,—at length, recovering himself a little, he said to her, in a faltering voice,

Palamede. “ For heaven's sake, madam, wound not thus my soul by the sight of your despair! — you have no cause! — it is certain that I long have lov'd you, but never had a thought of seducing your innocence; — the plot to bring you hither was not of my contriving; — 'tis true I came into it, as where is the man would not? but be assured I am no raving, nor capable of owing my pleasures to brutal violence; — oh therefore, throw aside that cruel weapon, or turn the point on me, and if I make the least attempt to offend your modesty bury it to the hilt within my bosom! ”

Emilia. “ Sir, I once look'd upon you as a man of honour, and should rejoice to find you could redeem yourself in my opinion.”

Palamede. “ By all that's sacred, not the utmost gratification of my loosest wishes could have given me half the joy as now, to prove myself not wholly unworthy the esteem of such exalted virtue! — Charming Emilia! — perfect in mind as well as form! — in both angelic! — behold me your convert! — The love I had for you is now ratified into adoration! — your virtue, like chemists gold, turns all into itself, and leaves no groffer particles behind! — forgive what is past, and never — never more will I presume to entertain you with discourses less chaste and pure than your own virgin thoughts! ”

Emilia. “ May I believe this penitence sincere? ”

Palamede. ‘ You may, by heaven ! and when I
‘ relapse into my former crime, may infamy,—dis-
‘ eases, — the contempt of the whole world,—
‘ your eternal hatred, and every other curse fall
‘ on me !’

Emilia. ‘ Then find some way, if possible, to
‘ take me immediately from this place and conduct
‘ me safe to my own apartment.’

Palamede. ‘ My readiness to obey you, madam,
‘ I hope, will prove the integrity of my present
‘ intentions, and be some atonement for the past ;
‘ — it is my happiness to have it in my power to
‘ do what you require with much more ease than
‘ you imagine ; — you shall no longer, beautiful
‘ Emilia, be imposed upon ; — the coachman, whom
‘ we pretended had left us, has only put up at an
‘ inn not above forty yards distant from this house ;
‘ — I suppose he may be gone to bed by this time,
‘ as we told him we should not return to London
‘ ’till the morning ; but I will send and have him
‘ roused.’

He had scarce made an end of speaking these words, when he rang the bell, and a waiter coming presently up, he gave him the necessary orders for fulfilling the promise he had just given to Emilia ; on which that young lady, with the utmost satisfaction in her voice and eyes, cry’d out,

Emilia ‘ This is truly honourable, indeed, — and
‘ worthy of yourself.’

Something which that instant started into the mind of Palamede, hinder’d him from making any answer, or even, perhaps, from hearing what she said ; — he rang the Bell a second time with all his force, and call’d for pen, ink and paper, which being brought, he told Emilia that decency and good manners would not suffer him to depart without taking some notice of the occasion to Favonius, with

with wh
understa
fion to
request
and he
epistle :

“ M
“ T
“ “
“ Emil
“ angel
“ think
“ please
“ nour
“ cond
“ am j
“ tunity
“ the h
“ you,
“ wher
“ — M
“ shall
“ lieve

While
came int

with whom he had always lived in a perfect good understanding, and therefore intreated her permission to write a few lines to that gentleman: — the request was too reasonable not to be complied with, and he sat down and dictated the following little epistle:

TO FAVONIUS.

“ My dear friend,
“ THINGS have happen'd very different from
“ what I was made to expect in regard to
“ Emilia: — in fine, — she is not a woman but an
“ angel, — as such I shall always esteem her, and
“ think it my glory to obey every command she is
“ pleased to lay upon me: — the first she has ho-
“ nour'd me with is to remove her hence and
“ conduct her to her own apartment, which I
“ am just now about to do. — I have no oppor-
“ tunity to discharge the music or the expences of
“ the house, so beg you will take the whole upon
“ you, and meet me to-morrow evening at Braund's,
“ where we will sup together and settle that affair.
“ — Make what compliments and excuses you
“ shall think proper for me to Corisca, and be-
“ lieve me,

“ With the greatest sincerity,

“ Dear Favonius,

“ Yours, &c.

“ PALAMEDE.”

While Palamede was thus employ'd, it also came into Emilia's head to let Corisca know some

part of the resentment she had conceived against her, — accordingly she took another pen out of the standish and express'd herself in these terms:

To CORISCA.

“ MADAM,

“ **W**HAT the united report of all who know you could never have made me believe, your behaviour this night has not only convinced me of, but also that the tongue of malice can find nothing wherewith to aggravate your real guilt. — Was it not enough, oh most ungenerous woman! to sink your own honour and reputation in eternal infamy, but you must also endeavour to drag others into perdition with you! — Know to your confusion, that I happily escaped the snare you had laid for me, and shall reap this benefit by my late danger, as to avoid the company of a person whom to preserve an acquaintance with must in the end have been the ruin of my character, if not of my virtue; for be assured, I shall henceforward be as careful to shun your presence as ever I was eager to come into it.—Here ceases all farther intercourse between us;—may the disappointment of your base designs on me serve as a warning to you not to attempt the like on any other equally inadvertent and uncautious as the

“ Much deceived

“ EMILIA.”

They had just finish'd, and made up the above billets, when the waiter return'd and told Palmede that

that he had, tho' not without some difficulty, prevail'd on the coachman to rise, and that before he left the inn he had seen him go into the stable to bring out the horses.

Palamede then gave him the letter he had wrote to Favonius,—saying,

Palamede. ‘ Be sure to deliver this to the gentleman who came with us as soon as he shall be stirring, --- and let him know I shall send the coach back in the morning.’

Emilia also put into his hands her epistle to Corisca, with these words :

Emilia. ‘ And let the lady know I left this for her.’

The fellow reply'd, that they might depend he would be punctual in discharging the commission they entrusted him with, and then withdrew.

Finding my Chrystaline Tablets were now overcharg'd, I was oblig'd to shut them up, so can relate no farther particulars of what conversation pass'd between Palamede and Emilia during the small time they waited for the coach to carry them away ;---and can only say in general, that the greatest reserve and distance was observed on both sides :--- Emilia, though now perfectly satisfied with the contrition of Palamede, thought it would be imprudent to appear too gay ;---and Palamede, fearful to renew her apprehensions, behaved towards her with all the solemnity of a Chinese Mandarin.

On their going down they were met at the bottom of the stairs by the woman who kept this tavern or rather brothel ; who ushering in what she had to say with a low curtesy, told Emilia that she flatter'd herself with the expectation of her sleeping there that night, and hoped nothing disagreeable had happen'd to occasion her departure at so unseasonable an hour ;---adding, that she should never

forgive herself if any thing in her house had disengaged so sweet a young lady.

Emilia answer'd this fawning speech only with a look of contempt; but Palamede told her she need be under no concern on that score,---the lady had no objections to her house, but chose never to sleep out of her own apartment.

No more was said,---they went into the coach and I follow'd on foot; for I had not curiosity enough to make me stay the remainder of the night in that place, for no other purpose than to see how Favonius and Corisca would behave on being told that Palamede and Emilia were gone, and receiving the epistles that gentleman and lady had left for them.

I had a long walk home; but my Invisibility secured me from the danger of any insults, and the satisfaction that rose in my mind, on the noble conquest virtue had gain'd over vice, made the way seem much less tedious.'

A few days after I was inform'd, by the report of the town, that Palamede made his public addresses to Emilia:—being willing to be better convinced in the truth of this matter, I made several visits to Emilia's apartment, and found that in fact the thing was as I had been told;---Palamede, who really lov'd Emilia much more than perhaps he was sensible of himself, before this proof she had given him of her virtue, got over that objection which the scantiness of her fortune had before laid in his way; and Emilia, who had liked him as much as Corisca had said she did, gave all the encouragement he could wish to his honourable passion.

I look upon the affair to be now in a manner concluded on, and that a very short time will consummate their mutual wishes,---a catastrophe which

I doubt

I doubt
rejoice a

Favor
nour an
sanguine
with Pal
in favour
—Corisca
Emilia is
traduce
destroy;
to shew
lia, by
tirely reg
she had

Contains
Autho
looks
obliga
ous, f
are a
bour
credit

O N
nu
in a justi

‘ Wisdo
‘ None

How
person w
circumst

I doubt not but every generous reader will heartily rejoice at as well as myself.

Favonius, who is in reality a man of strict honour and good principles, though somewhat too fanguine in his amours, still continues his intimacy with Palamede, and highly applauds his conversion in favour of the fair inspirer of his honourable flame; —Corisca bites her lips whenever the name of Emilia is mention'd, and endeavours all she can to traduce that virtue which she had not the power to destroy; but all she says on that score serves only to shew more plainly her own bad heart; and Emilia, by refraining all conversation with her, has entirely regain'd that esteem and good opinion which she had well nigh lost.

C H A P. IV.

Contains the rehearsal of a conversation which the Author accidentally happen'd to be witness of, and looks upon himself as bound by an indispensable obligation to make public; though perfectly conscious, from his observations of mankind, that there are a very great many of his readers who will labour all they can to bring these pages into discredit.

ONE whom I shall always rank among the number of our best English Authors, tells us in a justly esteem'd poem, that

- Wisdom is still to sloth too great a slave,
- None are so busy as the fool and knave.

How widely different are the pictures drawn of a person whose prudence makes him act and talk with circumspection and reserve? — How various are the representations

representations made of him?—He has almost as many characters as there are speakers of him;—by the abundance one hears of him the judgment is distracted, and there is no forming a right idea of what he truly is.

One can go into no company without hearing some mention made of Lord Honori^{us}, yet one shall seldom find any two people agree in their opinion concerning him, either as to his abilities or principles, whether in religious, moral, or political matters.

He is no follower of the court, yet does not totally avoid going thither;—he professes himself a member of the establish'd church, yet converses freely with those of different persuasions; he listens attentively to the arguments urged by persons of all parties and all sects, without offering any of his own, or giving his opinion, which are wrong or which are right.

For this reason all the zealots, both in religion and politics, brand him with lukewarmness, and say he is a man of an uncertain way of thinking, and has no settled principle of acting.

Some few there are who applaud his moderation, but many more who look upon it as a piece of low cunning, thereby to cover some latent designs he has within his bosom; but of what nature these are I have heard many warm disputes about.—Some will needs have him in the interest of the Pretender, and others that he is secretly a tool of the Ministry:—some have confidently averr'd that they have seen a white rose carry'd into his house on the 10th of June, and others that he has worn a yellow waistcoat on the birth-day of his present Majesty;—as if an innocent flower, or the colour of a piece of silk, were sufficient tokens to shew the wishes of the wearer's heart.

As

As to
all expe
his hou
than in
quently
favoura
tempt o
takes o
pursues
the gra
tion, a
ness of

Th
things v
incomp
some g
first he
any co
artifice
ceal.—
which

Am
relation
ing, th
he wou
his tra
should
tuality
These
seem to
lite w
his pr
join w
praise:

But
to the
solved

As to his economy in private life, he is not at all expensive in dress, equipage, or the furniture of his house, chusing to appear rather below his rank than in any particular to exceed it:—this is frequently attributed to his covetousness, while more favourable judges suppose it to be owing to his contempt of the modish fopperies of the age:—he partakes of all the pleasures of the town, but never pursues them to an excess or with eagerness;—the graver sort of people ascribe this to his discretion, and the more gay to want of spirit and coldness of constitution.

Thus apt are we to form a vain judgment on things we know nothing of;—the heart of man is incomprehensible, unless discovered by himself in some glaring proof either of virtue or vice;—the first he may not have an opportunity to set forth in any conspicuous light, and the latter he may have artifice and hypocrisy enough to gloss over and conceal.—How impossible then is it to be certain to which of these he is in reality devoted?

Among the variety of descriptions and reports in relation to Lord Honori^{us}, I found, notwithstanding, that it was agreed on by all hands, that though he would not suffer himself to be imposed upon by his tradesmen, yet he always took care their bills should be paid with the utmost exactness and punctuality, and that he never dealt with foreigners.—These articles, however insignificant they may seem to some of those who call themselves the polite world, I confess, gave me such an idea both of his prudence and justice, as made me immediately join with those who spoke the greatest things in his praise in other respects.

But being desirous of penetrating more deeply into the reality of this nobleman's disposition, I resolved to try how my Invisibilityship would serve that

that end, and accordingly made a visit one morning at his house.

I pass'd through several neat rooms, the furniture of which was rich, and befitting the dignity and fortune of the owner; but had nothing of gaudiness in it.—At last I found the person I went to seek,—he was in a closet within his dressing-room and had a book in his hand;—I was curious to see what was the subject of his meditations, and looking over his shoulder perceived it was the poems of our English Pindar, the celebrated Mr. Abraham Cowley;—the page he was employ'd in on my entrance contain'd, among others, these lines:

- “ Oh fountains ! when in you shall I,
- “ Eas'd of unpeaceful thoughts myself espy !
- “ O fields ! O woods ! when shall I be made
- “ The happy tenant of your shade !

- “ Here's the spring-head of pleasure's flood,
- “ Where all the riches lie,
- “ That she has coin'd and stamp'd for good,
- “ To charm the mind as well as eye.

- “ Pride and ambition here,
- “ Only in far-fetch'd metaphors appear ;
- “ Here's nought but winds can hurtful murmurs
- “ scatter,
- “ And nought but echo flatter.

- “ The Gods, when they descended hither
- “ From Heaven, did always chuse their way ;
- “ And therefore we may boldly say,
- “ That is the way too thither.

When he came to this part of the poem, he stopp'd and cry'd out with the greatest emphasis,

Lord

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ Charming inimitable Cowley !

‘ How just, how truly delicate are all thy notices, and how widely different from those of the age I have the misfortune to live in ! — If one may form a judgment, as sure one may, by the writings of seventy or eighty years ago, the genius of Britain was far unlike what it appears at present.’

He had scarce finish’d this exclamation, when a servant open’d the door and told him that Sir Whimsey Brainfick was come to wait upon him ; — on which he laid aside the book, and went into the next chamber to receive his guest.

After giving and returning the customary salutations of the morning, and having seated themselves, the following dialogue ensued between them.

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ ’Tis a wonder to see you dress’d and abroad thus early, Sir Whimsey ; — I think you are commonly in your first sleep after this time.’

Sir Whimsey Brainfick. ‘ Ay, my Lord, but pleasure must on some occasions give way to business ; — I have vast affairs upon my hands at present ; — I only snatch’d a moment to take leave of your Lordship, and two hours hence shall set out for the country.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ On your election I suppose ?’

Sir Whimsey Brainfick. ‘ No, no, — my Lord Trifflī Traffī has secur’d me a borough without my taking the trouble of ever going near it ; — my business at present is down at *****, where I have a considerable estate, and, I believe, a pretty good interest ; and I have engag’d myself to strain both, as far as they will go, in favour of Sir Crafty Shallowbuggen.’

Lord

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ Sir Crafty Shallowbuggen!—
‘ What then has mr. Worthy, the present mem-
‘ ber, declined standing?’

Sir Whimsey Brainsick. ‘ No, no, my Lord, he
‘ has not declined; but we are resolved to have him
‘ out at any rate.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ I would not have you deceive
‘ yourself, Sir Whimsey,—mr. Worthy is a gen-
‘ tleman who I am told is highly esteem’d by his
‘ constituents, and you may be at a great deal of
‘ expence to oppose him to no purpose.’

Sir Whimsey Brainsick. ‘ As to the expence, I
‘ don’t doubt but it will be made up to me some
‘ way or other;—I have my eye upon a place;
‘ and, I can tell you, am as good as promis’d ei-
‘ ther that or a riband.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ The character I have heard of
‘ mr. Worthy makes me sorry so powerful an op-
‘ position should be set on foot against him.’

Sir Whimsey Brainsick. ‘ He has been stubborn,
‘ my Lord, very stubborn,—has voted against the
‘ Jew and Clandestine Marriage Bills;—and it is
‘ not fit the Ministry should be affronted.—Your
‘ Lordship, I suppose, is a friend to the Ministry.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ Sir, I never gave any man
‘ reason to believe I was the contrary.’

Sir Whimsey Brainsick. ‘ No, no,—Your Lord-
‘ ship is too wise;—those who are friends to the
‘ Ministry are friends to themselves;—for my own
‘ part, if it were not to oblige them I would not
‘ give two-pence who had the election at *****,
‘ or any where else.—But I must beg your lord-
‘ ship’s pardon,—I have a thousand things to dis-
‘ patch, and would not be waited for by four or
‘ five gentlemen who accompany me on the same
‘ expedition,—so your Lordship’s most obedient.’

Lord

Lord
‘ you a g
With t
saw him t
back to h
Lord
‘ How d
‘ and en
As I
that it wa
ment of
all I had
Whimsey
some deb
tryman a
terwards,
service, I

I soon
ous of sp
judging b
sumption
door; bu
the other
hear disti

Footma
‘ ther m
‘ whether
‘ me kno
‘ from v
‘ ship sh
‘ answer
Count
‘ are yo
‘ malape
‘ see my
‘ right,

Lord Honorius. ‘ Yours, Sir Whimsey,—I wish you a good journey.’

With these words they parted.—Lord Honorius saw him to the top of the stair-case, and then turn’d back to his closet, saying to himself as he went,

Lord Honorius. ‘ What a wild world is this!—How do men toil to bring infamy on themselves, and entail certain ruin on their posterity!’

As I thought, by the little sample I had seen, that it was now in my power to make a better judgment of the sentiments of this nobleman than by all I had heard from others, I was following Sir Whimsey Brainsick down Stairs; but on hearing some debate between a plain honest-looking countryman and a spruce footman, who, as I found afterwards, had been but lately taken into my Lord’s service, I stopp’d short to listen to the occasion.

I soon perceived that the countryman was desirous of speaking to his Lordship, and the fellow, judging by appearances, thought it too great a presumption, and would fain have turn’d him from the door; but the rustic was not so easily repulsed as the other had imagined;—the first words I could hear distinctly were as follow:

Footman. ‘ I tell you, friend, I know not whether my Lord is at home or not;—or if he is, whether he pleases to be visible;—but if you let me know what busines you have with him, and from whom you came, I will take care his lordship shall be inform’d, and you may have your answer to-morrow.’

Countryman. ‘ Goodluck, mr. Skip-jack,—who are you?—my Lord is not used to have such malapert fellows about him:—but if I must not see my Lord, pray let me speak to mr. Down-right, the gentleman that dresses and waits upon him,

‘ him,—he knows me well enough, and will give
‘ me a better answer.’

The footman then vouchsafed to call the person he mention’d, and the countryman had the satisfaction to find himself well received,—mr. Downright shook him cordially by the hand,—told him he was glad to see him in London, and ask’d what business had brought him hither;—to which the other reply’d,

Countryman. ‘ In good troth I did not come
upon pleasure,—I have busines,—very great busines with my Lord, and would fain speak to
him,—if so be I may have liberty to come into
his presence, as you know, mr. Downright, I
have done many a good time in the country:—
but that mr. Finikin there, with his pig-tail wig,
stands as it were like a mud-wall to keep every
body off the house.’

Mr. Downright. ‘ Oh he did not know you,
mr. Goodacre; and besides, he has lived in fa-
milies where nobody without a coach or chair
are admitted;—but I will acquaint my Lord you
are here,—he is alone, and I am sure will see
you.’

Countryman. ‘ Thank you, mr. Downright;—
it is well there are some civil people in this same
town.’

Mr. Downright then went on his message,—
the footman look’d very sheepish and sneak’d away,
while the countryman strutted about the hall as great
as an emperor, ’till the valet return’d and desir’d
him to walk up.

As I took mr. Goodacre for one of my Lord’s
tenants, and imagin’d he was only come on the
score of renewing a lease, or some other country
affairs relating to himself, which I had no manner
of curiosit to pry into, I was in some debate
within

within m
out of th
a certain
account f
and I tur
presence
a recepti
quality to
particular

His L
near him
the greater
he was g
—that h
same sha
busines
former p
swer’d w
ply’d in t

Mr. G
ship kn
ment,—
over th
wonder
fair pro
votes,
can mi
basely,
tives,—
the futu
Lord A
does s
think f

Mr. G
no ma
pretend
'Squire

within myself whether I should stay or go directly out of the house, the door being then open ; but a certain impulse, the meaning of which I cannot account for, sway'd me to pursue my first thought, and I turn'd back and accompanied him into the presence of my Lord, from whom he met with a reception not commonly given by persons of quality to a man of his plain appearance, except on particular occasions.

His Lordship made him sit down in a chair very near himself, and, with a smiling countenance and the greatest affability in his voice and air, told him he was glad to see him look so well and hearty, —that he hop'd his wife and family enjoy'd the same share of good health,—and then ask'd what business had brought him up to London :—to the former part of these obliging speeches he only answer'd with several low bows ; but to the latter reply'd in these terms :

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ Why, my Lord, your Lordship knows we are going to have a new Parliament,—and belike there will be a great bustle all over the kingdom about Elections ;—and no wonder if there be ;—every one makes us such fair promises when they come to ask us for our votes, that 'tis a hard matter to know which we can most depend upon ;—we have been served basely, very basely, by some of our representatives,—and it behoves us to be very cautious for the future.’

Lord Honorius. ‘ Very true, mr. Goodacre, it does so indeed,—and I hope the nation will think so.’

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ Now as to our borough,—no man could make finer speeches to us, or pretend he had our interest more at heart, than 'Squire Earnly, before he was chosen, yet he

‘ no

‘ no sooner got into the house than he shew’d he
‘ did not care a straw for us,—laugh’d at all our
‘ petitions and remonstrances, and, I am told, made
‘ a merit of it to the Ministry.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ I am afraid there are too many
‘ who have done so.—Does the same gentleman
‘ set up again?’

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ No, my lord,—he would have
‘ no chance for it if he did,—we know him too
‘ well, he sees that well enough ;—but ’tis thought,
‘ however, that he will get in for some place or
‘ other.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ Nothing more likely.—But
‘ do you hear who intends to offer himself in his
‘ stead?’

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ Yes, my Lord,—great interest
‘ is already making for one Capt. Sashbright ;
‘ —he is as fine a person, indeed, as the sun
‘ shines upon ;—but we know nothing of him :—
‘ he is recommended by Sir Courtly Jobber,—
‘ has brought a power of money down with him ;
‘ —they went together in Sir Courtley’s coach to
‘ ***** fair,—bought a great many things, and
‘ gave them to every body about them ;—guineas
‘ and broad pieces fly about like hail ;—any one,
‘ almost, may have them for picking up.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ So then he may easily carry
‘ it, I suppose?’

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ I cannot tell that, my Lord,
‘ —there was a numerous meeting at the Rose
‘ about a fortnight ago, and ’Squire Wellwood of
‘ the Green was put in nomination,—his family
‘ has been settled for a long time at *****, he,
‘ lives most part in the country,—does a great
‘ deal of good among the poor, and is mainly be-
‘ loved.’

Lord

Lord
‘ —he is
‘ *Mr. G*
‘ have it
‘ fiderati
‘ *Lord*
‘ *Mr. G*
‘ that if
‘ *Act of*
‘ the *Co*
‘ which
‘ advant
‘ *Lord*
‘ *Mr. G*
‘ sure it
‘ —Som
‘ their p
‘ We al
‘ gentler
‘ —he m
‘ ly divi
‘ leave t
‘ and ha
‘ your l
‘ *Lord*
‘ *Mr. G*
‘ *Lord*
‘ your c
‘ *Lord*
‘ *Gooda*
‘ prove
‘ other
‘ tor oug
‘ of his
‘ fway’d
‘ for a n
‘ attemp

Lord Honoriūs. 'I know him, mr. Goodacre, —he is certainly a very worthy gentleman.'

Mr. Goodacre. 'Ay, my Lord, — he would have it all to nothing, if it was not for one consideration.'

Lord Honoriūs. 'What is that?'

Mr. Goodacre. 'The Captain has promised, that if he gets his election he will procure an Act of Parliament for a new Road to be cut, at the Government's expence, from **** to **, which your Lordship knows would be a great advantage to our market.'

Lord Honoriūs. 'A very great one, indeed.'

Mr. Goodacre. 'Ay, my Lord, if we were sure it would be done;—but there lies the query. —Some people will promise any thing to gain their point, and never think of it afterwards.— We all know 'Squire Wellwood to be a noble gentleman,—and so may Capt. Sashbright too, —he may or he may not.—Now we are strangely divided in our opinions, whether we ought to leave the certain good for the uncertain better,— and have at length resolved to be decided by your Lordship.'

Lord Honoriūs. 'By me!'

Mr. Goodacre. 'Yes, my Lord, we know your Lordship to be a wise man, and a true lover of your country.'

Lord Honoriūs. 'I have always thought, Mr. Goodacre, that to meddle in these things would prove me deserving neither of the one nor the other of the epithets you give me;—every elector ought to give his vote according to the dictates of his conscience, and not suffer himself to be sway'd by any interest or motive whatever; and for a nobleman or other person of distinction, to attempt, either by menaces or cajolings, to make them

them act to the contrary, appears to me to be the most gross encroachment on liberty that can be offer'd.'

Mr. Goodacre. 'But here the case is widely different, my Lord.'

Lord Honorius. 'I grant it is.—You desire my advice as a friend,—not submit to be govern'd by me as a director;—it would therefore be ungenerous, and even cruel, in me to suffer you to be deluded by false pretences, when it is so easily in my power to put you upon your guard against them.—In the first place, you ought to consider that Capt. Sashbright, whatever his character may otherwise be, is an officer in the army, —and as such it is his interest to promote the continuance of a standing army, and consequently of those taxes which are necessary for the support of it.—In the second, Sir Courtly Jobber, who it seems is the person who recommends him, has for a long time, to my certain knowledge, been an agent for the ministry, and is indebted for his title, and the best part of the estate he is in possession of, merely to the good services he has render'd them.'

Mr. Goodacre. 'Ay marry, —these things are worth thinking of indeed:—So I suppose, my Lord, the money he so plentifully throws about is none of his own?'

Lord Honorius. 'Not a doit,—he will be reimburs'd with interest.'

Mr. Goodacre. And yet I know not, my Lord, but there may be some among us foolish enough to be inveigled by this bait.—Alackaday!—we country people are ignorant of such practices; —we little think what the great folks in town are doing, and a many there are that would not believe a word of it without good authority.... Oh

* I wish

‘ I wish your Lordship were down at Eggum-Hall
‘ at this critical juncture.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ I will be there, mr. Good-
‘ acre, in spite of the aversion I have always had
‘ to appear at elections, or to distinguish myself
‘ on any occasion ;---my love to the place which
‘ gave me birth, and good-will to my countrymen,
‘ shall overbalance all other considerations ;----I
‘ will do all I can to strengthen the weak eyes
‘ which are in danger of being dazzled with Sir
‘ Courley’s gold, and shew them the false lustre
‘ of his fleeting promises.’

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ Heavens bless your Lordship!
‘ ---a noble resolution.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ When do you return, mr.
‘ Goodacre.’

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ I shall lie but this one night in
‘ town, my Lord, and set out betime to-morrow
‘ morning.’

Lord Honoriūs. ‘ I will not be two days behind
‘ you ;---in the mean time you may tell them what
‘ I say.’

Mr. Goodacre. ‘ It will be joyful news to
‘ some.’

There pass’d no farther conversation between
them, the honest countryman rose up to take his
leave, full of transport at the success of his nego-
tiation ; but Lord Honoriūs would not permit him
to depart ’till he had rung the bell for mr. Down-
right, and given orders that he should be made wel-
come with the best entertainment the house afford-
ed ;---I left him to accept the Invitation, and re-
turn’d to my apartment, well satisfied in my mind
that I was now enabled to form a right judgment
of this nobleman’s principles and disposition.

C H A P. V.

Presents the reader with the detail of a very remarkable incident, which, I believe, if consider'd with a due attention, there are but few people, especially of the Fair Sex, who will not find themselves enabled to become better members of society by having perused.

A Certain sacred writer tells us, that the tongue is an unruly member, and preaches much concerning the government of it ;—but I dare not presume to insist too much on his authority, as he has been, with other of his contemporaries, pretty much exploded for almost half a century ; and I might be look'd upon, by my polite readers, as a very old-fashion'd silly fellow to make any mention of him.

But I may venture, without running the risque of being read with a horse-laugh, to quote the words of another very great and learned person of a more modern date, who says,—that the tongue is the most dangerous of all weapons ;—that it is capable of destroying all peace, all love, all harmony in the world ;—of sowing dissensions among families ; of disuniting the hearts of the dearest friends and relations ; of ruining the reputation and fortune of whomsoever it is levell'd against ; and that even murders and the worst of mischiefs may be occasion'd by it.

That

That
ment of
gers in i
ry one e
or priva
not the
word is
py cons
chance-
the most
giver of

A tal
passion
hears, or
to societ
from le
the same
mean n
how far
may be
that wh
him to t

Nothi
hurt th
occasion
would b
the pres

‘ Think
‘ I have

But t
doubtles
able tha
must gi
sometim
very mi
a person
Voi

That the tongue, when it becomes the instrument of a malicious heart, carries a thousand daggers in it, is a truth which the observation of every one evinces.—But this is not all,—public abuse or private scandal, defamation and detraction, are not the only vices of the tongue,—an unguarded word is frequently productive of the most unhappy consequences—it wounds, as it were, by chance-medley, and a person may be stabb'd in the most tender part without any intention in the giver of the blow.

A talkative disposition, or, in other words, a passion for repeating every thing one sees and hears, or even guesses at, is extremely dangerous to society; and tho' it is a foible proceeding rather from levity than ill-nature, sometimes produces the same effects; those guilty of it, perhaps, may mean no hurt;—but, alas! they consider not how far the person to whom they are speaking may be interested in the report they make, and that what they imagine of no moment may stab him to the quick.

Nothing is more common than for people to hurt thus at random, and by their rashness to occasion accidents, which if they foresaw they would be most careful to prevent,—as a poet of the present age emphatically enough expresses it:

‘Thinking to shoot my arrow o'er the house,
‘I have kill'd my brother.’

But this inadvertency, as great a weakness as it doubtless is, has in it somewhat yet more excusable than to reveal a secret which we are conscious must give the hearer pain.—I confess that this is sometimes done thro' good-will; but then it is a very mistaken good-will in many cases.—If I know a person sustains an injury, and has it in his power

to redress the grievance, it is certainly my duty to acquaint him with it; but when the evil is without a remedy, it is infinitely more kind to suffer him to remain in ignorance.

To be well deceived, is almost equal to not being deceived at all,—our happiness consists in the imagination of it; and if we firmly believe ourselves possess'd of what we wish, it is the same thing as being so in reality:—How cruel is it then for any one to draw back the friendly curtain that hides ill fortune from us, and compel us to behold our wretchedness!

Every one who is thus unhappily undeceived may cry out with Bellamira in the play,

————— ‘ Ah, cruel friend !
 ‘ Why did’st thou wake me from my dream of
 ‘ bliss !
 ‘ Why bring me from that scene of fancied joys,
 ‘ To one of real anguish, horror and despair !’

Many unhappy instances of these well-meant ill offices have come to my knowledge since I was in possession of the Gift of Invisibility;—but I shall recite only one of them, which, as it is a very late transaction, and but few people know the real truth of, is at present a matter of much speculation among those who are any way acquainted with the parties concerned, or have even heard their names.

Meroveus and Deidamia were an extreme happy pair, the railers against marriage could find nothing in the conduct of either of them to countenance any sarcasms on that state;—the most tender affection had been the chief, if not the sole motive of the union between them; and the secure and uninterrupted possession of each other, instead of diminishing, seem’d rather to increase their

their mutual ardour, and the first bridal fondness appear'd in their behaviour after having served a more than seven years apprenticeship to Hymen.

Yet, how on a sudden have we seen all this sweet serenity turn'd into storms and tempests?—Meroveus and Deidamia, who it was thought could not have lived a single week out of each other's presence, are now parted,—according to all probability,—parted,—to meet no more in love.

Besides the many great accomplishments which justified the affection they so long had towards each other, both of them were accounted persons of an excellent understanding and solid sense,—nothing therefore could have more amazed the world than that they should come to this open rupture, even though some little cause of complaint had happen'd either on the one side or the other.

An event so strange, so little dream'd of, put all conjecture to a stand;—people pretended not even to guess what should be the occasion, much less to unravel so great a mystery,—the accomplishment of that work was reserved by fate for the Invisible Spy alone.

The manner in which I made this discovery, I shall relate as concisely, as the conversation which let me into it will admit of.

As I was one day taking a solitary walk on Constitution-Hill, I saw Deidamia leaning on the arm of Eutracia, a lady of birth and fortune, who had been bred up with her at the boarding-school, and ever since been her most intimate friend and companion;—just as they approach'd the place where I was, the following dialogue began between them:

Deidamia. ‘ Now for the secret you have to tell me;—methinks I have a more than ordinary impatience to hear it, and we cannot be more retired,—no living soul is near us, and there is

‘ no danger of any one coming to interrupt our discourse, as all the world are in the Mall.’

Eutracia. ‘ I will not keep you long in suspense, my dear ; — but first you must answer two or three questions I have to ask you, and then resolve to arm yourself with all the fortitude you are mistress of not to be too much shock’d at what I shall relate.’

Deidamia. ‘ I cannot conceive that there is any thing, which either you or any one else can tell me, capable of giving me a shock. — But pray, what is it you would know from me ?’

Eutracia. ‘ The town looks upon you as one of the most happy women in it, — is it true that you are really so ?’

Deidamia. ‘ Indeed, my dear, I think myself so ; — and if I would labour to be more bless’d, know not how to form a single wish beyond what I possess.’

Eutracia. ‘ There are many private causes of disquiet, — which prudence obliges us to conceal. — Are you thoroughly convinced of the affection of your husband ?’

Deidamia. ‘ I never had the least cause to doubt it ; and the tenderness I have for him is so sincere and delicate, as I think would make me easily perceive a want of it in him. — But wherefore do you ask ; — you cannot have any reason to suspect him ?’

Eutracia. ‘ Ah, poor Deidamia !’

Deidamia. ‘ Why do you sigh, and look so piteously upon me ? — Some wretch has certainly belyed Meroveus to you.’

Eutracia. ‘ No ; — but one more interrogatory and I have done. — Does he never absent himself without letting you know where he goes ? — never lie out of his own house ?’

‘ De-’

Dei
‘ ly ; —
‘ dress
‘ freq
‘ him,
‘ havin
‘ Lond
Eutr
‘ cent.
Deid
‘ Had
‘ shoul
‘ an ac
Eutr
‘ honou
‘ is fal
‘ —
‘ power
‘ own e
‘ give h
‘ vered,
Deida
‘ he a v
Eutrac
‘ wench
‘ her, —
‘ nights
‘ he pass
The t
these wo
she must
had not
lower end
— the kee
was so h
which bei
to herself.
agitatem,

Deidamia. ‘Very seldom, and that but lately; —an intimate friend of his makes his addresses to a young lady at Hammersmith, —he frequently desires my husband’s company with him, and they sometimes stay all night, when having supp’d there, it is dangerous to return to London, as the roads are now infested.’

Eutracia. ‘How easy is it to deceive the innocent.—Meroveus is a villain.’

Deidamia. ‘How, Eutracia! —a villain! —Had any other call’d him so, my resentment should have shewn how much I despise so base an accusation.’

Eutracia. ‘Alas! —’tis your own love and honour makes you so tenacious of his, but he is false in both; —and I again repeat the name, —he is a villain, and will put it in your own power to prove him so by the testimony of your own eyes and ears, —provided you promise to give him no previous hints that you have discovered, or even suspect his perfidy.’

Deidamia. ‘But how! —how, Eutracia, is he a villain! ’

Eutracia. ‘He keeps a mistress, some common wench no doubt; but he adores, —doats on her, —pretends himself her husband, and those nights when you imagine him at Hammersmith, he passes with her.’

The tender Deidamia was now so overcome at these words, that her spirits quite forsook her, and she must certainly have fallen on the earth, if they had not happen’d to be very near a bench at the lower end of the walk, where Eutracia placed her; —the keeper of the gate perceiving her condition, was so humane as to run and fetch some water, which being sprinkled on her face soon brought her to herself.—Eutracia, on seeing her fair friend thus agitated, seem’d, and I believe really was, very

much concern'd at what she had done ; for she could not restrain some tears from falling down her eyes while she express'd herself in these terms :

Eutracia. ‘ My dearest Deidamia, if I had not thought you would have received this intelligence with more moderation, you should have been for ever ignorant of it.’

The afflicted lady made no reply to these words, but in a few minutes growing somewhat more compos'd, quitted the bench, and leaning on Eutracia, the conversation was renew'd in this manner :

Deidamia. ‘ Oh, Eutracia ! little are you capable of conceiving the agonies this poor distracted bleeding heart sustains ! — yet I must know all. — Tell me by what means you got information of this horrid secret, and how you are assured of its veracity !’

Eutracia. ‘ It was not my intention to conceal any part of it ; — but you must determine to listen with calmness to me.’

Deidamia. ‘ I will.’

Eutracia. ‘ Well then, — I will tell you all. — I believe you know mrs. Flounceit, my mantua-maker.’

Deidamia. ‘ I saw her once ; — you may remember I was with you when she brought home your last new fack.’

Eutracia. ‘ That woman, you must know, has an interest with some foreign merchants, and can frequently oblige her customers with some curious things which are prohibited to be sold in public ; — she came last monday, and acquainted me that she had several patterns of the most beautiful chints that ever were seen ; — I went the next morning in order to see them, and was carried into a back parlour for the sake of privacy ; as I was looking over the goods I heard a man call from the top of the stair-case to know if the

coach

coach was come ; I thought myself perfectly acquainted with the voice, tho' I could not just then recollect whose it was ; but presently after saw Meroveus lead a woman cross the garden, at the lower end of which there is a little door that opens into another street ;—a pebble or some such thing, happening to lie in the walk, she stumbled in passing, on which he cry'd out with the greatest tenderness,—“ I hope you are not hurt, my love ! ”—“ No reply'd she briskly,—“ not at all, I cannot receive any Prejudice when my guardian angel is so near.”—I was so astonish'd at what I saw and heard, that I had not power to speak, 'till mrs. Flounceit seeing me look earnestly after them, told me they were her lodgers ;—that they were lately married ; but some reasons obliging them to keep it private, they met each other there only once or twice a week ;—“ So, said she, I have very little trouble with them, and they pay me a good rent.”—“ But are you sure, cry'd I, that they are man and wife ? —It may be an intrigue.”—“ No, answer'd she, they were recommended to me by a gentleman who formerly lodged with me himself, one Sir David Townly.”

Deidamia. “ Oh heavens ! —Sir David Townly ! —Why he is the very person my husband pretends he goes with to Hammersmith.”

Eutracia. “ 'Tis likely he may be his confidant in this amour.”

Deidamia. “ Yet still I know not how to think it real,—one man may be like another.—Are you certain it was Meroveus whom you saw ? ”

Eutracia. “ As certain as that it is Deidamia to whom I talking.—Did he not lie abroad last Monday night ? ”

Deidamia. “ He did.”

Eutracia. ‘ And had he not on a dark-brown
‘ velvet coat and a black waistcoat trimm’d with
‘ bugles ?’

Deidamia. ‘ He had.— Oh I can no longer
‘ shut my eyes against conviction !— the dread-
‘ ful truth is too glaring to be resisted, and I see
‘ myself the most miserable of women !’

Eutracia. ‘ Do not think so,— rather exert
‘ the spirit of an injur’d wife,— detect him in
‘ his guilt, shame him to repentance, and make
‘ him sue for pardon.’

Deidamia. ‘ Oh that such love as ours has
‘ been should come to this !’

Eutracia. ‘ All yet may be retriev’d ; — your
‘ just reproaches may make him loath his past fol-
‘ lies, and become more yours than if he never
‘ had transgress’d : — the next time he takes his
‘ pretended Journey to Hammersmith let me know
‘ it.’

Deidamia. ‘ He is gone thither now ; — just
‘ before you came to call me to the Park he told
‘ me Sir David had engag’d his company, and he
‘ believ’d he should not return ’till morning.’

Eutracia. ‘ Well then he shall be met, my
‘ dear Deidamia, he shall be met by those he least
‘ expects or desires to see ; — I will take you in the
‘ morning to mrs. Flounceit’s, under pretence of
‘ bringing her a new customer ; — there you will
‘ have the same opportunity I had of discovering
‘ your husband’s guilt, and may act as you shall
‘ judge proper on the occasion.’

Deidamia. ‘ How shall I contain myself !—
‘ base—base man !—cruel deceiver of my
‘ fond, my unsuspecting heart !— How bear
‘ the sight of that vile she !— that infamous de-
‘ luder of his honour !— that cursed she who
‘ has robb’d me of the only treasure I valued up-
‘ on earth, my husband’s love !’

Here

Here f
mations ;
ing already
behaviour
who in h
womanki

‘ They
‘ wind
‘ And g
‘ blind
‘ Yet w
‘ The v
‘ roll.

The
beginning
proper t
Eutracia
friend w
and at li
compani
cepted,
Deidam

Whicb,
no ne
of an
people
reade

I Was
per
tle ple
tion sh
detect

Here she burst into the most vehement exclamations ; but my Chrystraline Remembrancer being already overcharg'd, I can only say that her behaviour verify'd the words of Mr. Nat. Lee, who in his description he gives of the passions of womankind in general, has these lines :

- ‘ They shrink at thunder, dread the rustling
‘ wind,
- ‘ And glitt’ring swords the brightest eyes will
‘ blind ;
- ‘ Yet when strong jealousy enflames the soul,
- ‘ The weak will rage, and calms to tempests
‘ roll.’

The ladies continued their walk 'till Phœbus beginning to withdraw his beams they both thought proper to retire from the approaching dews.—Eutracia, justly apprehending the agitations of her friend would become more violent, if left alone and at liberty to indulge them, offer'd to be her companion that night, which the other gladly accepted, and I saw them take coach together for Deidamia's house,—after which I went home.

C H A P. VI.

Which, according to the Author's opinion, stands in no need of a prelude, as it contains only the sequel of an adventure too interesting to all degrees of people not to demand the attention of every reader.

I Was truly concern'd at the injustice which I perceived poor Deidamia sustained, and but little pleas'd with Eutracia, either for the information she had given her of it, or for advising her to detect Meroveus in the manner concerted between

them ;—indeed, I fear'd that the consequences of such an interview would be only to make the husband become more harden'd in his guilt, and her affliction increase by finding her resentment disregarded.

Few men can bear reproofs, much less reproaches ;—if ever they quit a darling folly the reformation must come of themselves :—it must proceed from a consciousness they have done amiss, not from being told so by others ;—there is a pride in human nature which despairs admonition, and makes us persist in error, which, if not taken notice of, perhaps in time we might discover to be such, grow ashamed of, and amend.

Besides, remonstrances from a person whom we look upon as any way our inferior, either in point of understanding or circumstances, will be so far from having any weight, that they will rather add to our contempt, and, it may be, raise in us an utter aversion to the giver :—Custom has made the husband so much the head of the wife, that, tenacious of his authority, it is but seldom that he submits to be influenced by her in matters of much less moment to him than his pleasures.

Indeed, when a woman is wrong'd in the manner Deidamia was, it must be confess'd that the shock is greatly trying, and that she has the strongest reason for complaining ;—yet will she still find it most prudent to forbear :—love and gentleness are the only weapons by which that sex can hope to conquer, and she who attempts to have recourse to any other only hurts herself.—By seeming not to suspect her husband's vices, she will at least, oblige him to keep them as private as he can, and also to treat her with all the respect due to her character and the sacred union between them ; whereas by growing clamorous and impatient she furnishes him with a pretence to use her ill, and turns

turns the indifference he before had for her into hatred and detestation.

One of our best Poets has an observation on this head, which, I think, is very well worthy of the serious attention of all who are either injured in reality, or imagine themselves to be so, yet find it their interest to preserve an amicable correspondence with the person guilty of the injury ; as it is certain that no man detected in the thing which he wishes to conceal can ever love the person by whom he is detected.—The words of the author I mention'd are these :

‘ Forgiveness to the injur'd does belong ;
‘ But they ne'er pardon who have done the
‘ wrong.’

These reflections, together with my impatience to see how Deidamia would support the full conviction of her husband's falsehood, so much took up my mind, that it was a considerable time before I remember'd how great an impediment lay between me and the gratification of my curiosity.—Mrs. Flounceit's house was to be the scene of action, and the ladies, during their whole conversation, had made no mention in what street, nor even in what quarter of the town, that wretched woman lived :—however, as I supposed her to be a noted woman in her business, I hoped to get over this difficulty, and did so, by sending an emissary to enquire among the mercers, hoop-petticoat-makers, and other such people who are employ'd in the equipments of the ladies, and I went not to bed without receiving the direction I stood in need of.

As I knew not the hour in which Meroveus and the partner of his looser pleasures would be preparing to depart, nor that in which Deidamia would be conducted by Eutracia to behold this

proof

proof of her misfortune, I took care to go very early to Mrs. Flounceit's, and was obliged to wait a considerable time before the door happen'd to be open'd to let any one pass in or out ;—at last, however, it was so,—I got an opportunity to enter,—went into the back parlour, and posted myself in that corner of it which I thought would be the safest and most commodious.

My patience was not here put to any long trial,—the ladies arrived a few minutes after I came, usher'd into the room by mrs. Flounceit, who placed them on a settee with a great deal of formal complaisance, and then made some apologies, as many people do when they are dress'd as well as they can be, for being in such a dishabille, and not in the order she could wish to receive them.

It was easy for me to perceive, by Deidamia's countenance, how ill she had pass'd the night ;—Eutracia also seem'd in some agitation,—though she dissembled it as well as she was able : after having given some slight answer to mrs. Flounceit's compliments, told her she had brought a friend to look over some of her fine things, on which the mantua-maker immediately open'd a large press, and brought out several pieces of chints, with some French brocades and rich Italian silks,—these she spread upon a table, accompanying that action with many praises on the beauty and curioſity of each.

But it was in vain she boasted,—in vain she magnified ;—all she said,—as well as the real merit of the goods she exhibited to sale, was wholly lost on Deidamia ;—the mind of that afflicted lady was too much bent on thote things which she expected to be witness of, to have any eyes or ears for those which were not present to her ;—she took up first one piece, and then another, but without seeming to know what she

she did ;
in her ai
to keep
taking a

Her b
the eaus
which, i
she mig
condition

• Love,
• Have
• I am
• And
• Requi
• rig

But i
idea of
what m
remaina
certain
no farth
house c
in her
tleman
ments
breakfa

Mrs
to thi
contain
rectly
young
had bu

Dei
when
words

she did ; and, in fine, had something so distracted in her air and gestures, that Eutracia was obliged to keep mrs. Flounceit in discourse, to prevent her taking any notice of it.

Her behaviour, join'd with my knowledge of the cause, reminded me of mr. Dryden's words, which, if she had been inclined to think of poetry, she might pretty justly have apply'd to her own condition in this crisis :

- ‘ Love, justice, nature, pity, and revenge,
- ‘ Have kindled a wildfire in my breast ;
- ‘ I am all a civil war within,
- ‘ And like a vessel, struggling in a storm,
- ‘ Require more hands than one to keep me up-
‘ right.’

But if she was so little able to support the bare idea of the shock she came on purpose to receive, what must she endure when suspense, and all the remains of hope, were swallowed up in the cruel certainty of her misfortune, and conviction left no farther room for doubt ?---The maid of the house came into the room with a chocolate-pot in her hand, and told her mistress that the gentleman and lady above stairs gave their compliments and desir'd the favour of her company to breakfast with them.

Mrs. Flounceit was about to make some answer to this invitation, when Deidamia, not able to contain herself, flew out of the parlour, and directly up stairs, where she found Meroveus and a young woman sitting on the side of the bed they had but lately quitted.

Deidamia had scarce enter'd the chamber when she surpriz'd the guilty pair with these words :

Deidamia.

Deidamia. ‘ I have a right, sir, to think my company ought to be as acceptable to Meroveus as that of mrs. Flounceit, or any any other woman.’

Eutracia had follow’d Deidamia as fast as she could, in order, I suppose, to prevent any desperate effects of her present passion, and I was not far behind ; but it will be more easy for the reader to conceive the surprise which appeared in the looks of Meroveus than for me to express it ;—he started up, and with a voice which the various emotions of his mind render’d almost unintelligible, said to her :

Meroveus. ‘ Confusion!—Deidamia!—Madam, what brings you here !

Deidamia. ‘ That is a question which ought rather to be put to you.—I came in pursuit of an ungrateful, too much beloved husband ;—you to indulge a lawless flame for an abandon’d prostitute.’

Meroveus. ‘ Madam,—madam, this does not become you.’

Deidamia. ‘ Does it become you, sir, to leave your honest home and wife,—make pitiful excuses for your absence, and skulk in corners with a wretch like this,—this abject hireling of licentious wishes !’

Mistress. ‘ Madam, I would not have you think I am any such person ;—I did not know Meroveus was a married man.’

Deidamia. ‘ ’Tis false, vile creature, you could not know Meroveus without knowing he had a wife,—a wife, who, without boasting, is every way his equal :—but get out of my sight, that I may have liberty to ask my perjur’d husband what he could see in that face of yours to be preferr’d to mine.’

On

On the
speak, be
being, as
and by the
hobbled
and cam
she enter
Mrs.
‘ here !’
Deida
‘ that ye
Mrs.
‘
Eutra
‘ —
‘ —the
‘ I was
‘ there
Mrs.
‘ Sir D
‘ this fo
‘ tenant
‘ house
‘ to car
In spe
trefs of
of the
intent,
flam’d
Mero
‘ has pu
‘ take
‘ soever
‘ Ther
Mero
‘ have
‘ I will

On this Meroveus was opening his mouth to speak, but was prevented by mrs. Flounceit, who being astonish'd on the lady's running up stairs, and by the noise she immediately heard above, had hobbled up as fast as her fat would give her leave, and came into the room that moment,—crying as she enter'd,

Mrs. Flounceit. ‘ Bleſs me, what is the matter here !?’

Deidamia. ‘ Perhaps, madam, you are ignorant that your house is made a brothel.’

Mrs. Flounceit. ‘ Oh my stars !—a brothel !—heaven forbid !’

Eutracia. ‘ My friend tells you true, indeed ;—she is the lawful wife of that gentleman, —they have been married above seven years,— I was present at their wedding, and that woman there is no better than a prostitute.’

Mrs. Flounceit. ‘ Oh the vile slut !—I wonder Sir David Townly should offer to bring me into this scrape !—he knows very well I never countenance such doings.—Hussy, get out of my house this minute, or I will send for a constable to carry you to Bridewell !’

In speaking this she advanced towards the mistress of Meroveus, and was about to push her out of the room ; but that gentleman, perceiving her intent, stepp'd between, and with a visage all inflam'd with wrath, said,

Meroveus. ‘ Hold, madam, hold ;—this lady has put herself under my protection, and I will take care to defend her from all insults whatsoever.’

Then turning to Deidamia went on thus :

Meroveus. ‘ As for you, madam, — you have only exposed me and undone yourself ;— I will never see you more.’

He then took his trembling mistress by the hand to lead her down stairs ;—Deidamia, in the utmost agony of spirit, follow'd and catching him by the arm, cry'd out to him,

Deidamia. ‘ Oh stay, Meroveus !—you will not, sure, add injury to injury !—stay, I conjure you, and let that woman go !’

Meroveus. ‘ Stand off, madam, — your touch is more hateful to me than ever it was agreeable, — so leave you to repent the cause.’

This cruel rebuff not making her let go the hold she had taken of him, he threw her off with the greatest contempt, and in an instant was out of the house with his dissolute companion, who was, doubtless, as hasty as himself to get from a place where she could expect nothing but affronts.

Deidamia would have pursued her ungenerous husband, perhaps even into the street, had she not been withheld by Eutracia, who endeavoured to convince her how little it would avail to remonstrate any thing to him while he continued in this humour.

Rage had 'till now kept up the spirits of this unhappy lady ; but the objects of it being removed, and the power of reflecting return'd, she sunk into a grief no less immoderate,—she wept,—she wrung her hands,—beat her lovely breast,—she swoon'd several times, and in her intervals of sense could only cry out,—‘ Cruel, barbarous Meroveus !—Unfaithful, ungenerous husband !—Good heaven, for what unknown transgression am I become thus miserable ?’

Neither Eutracia nor mrs. Flounceit omitted any thing in their power which they thought might serve to give her consolation ; but all they could do was insufficient, and it was some hours before she was enough recover'd even to be carried home :

home :—
with her
touch'd t

I have
cerning t
secrets to
farther re
as much
catastrop

I went
roveus, a
servants f
been at l
would be
Deidamia
melanchol
her, that
since the
at mrs. F
them con
and perfu
it not ma

I had
an hour
damia,—
these line

“ MA
“ I Am
“ I cer
“ do wi
“ tween
“ I now
“ matur
“ union
“ our, n
“ me fre
“ bear i

home:—as soon as she was so, Eutracia went with her in the coach, and I walked home, touch'd to the very soul at the sight of her distress.

I have already given the reader my opinion concerning the extreme folly of revealing unwelcome secrets to our friends, so shall forbear adding any farther reflections on that head, and proceed, with as much brevity as the story will admit, to the catastrophe of this unhappy adventure.

I went the next morning to the house of Meroeves, and was convinced, by what I heard the servants say among themselves, that he had not been at home that night, which, indeed, I fear'd would be the case.—On my going up stairs I found Deidamia lying on a couch, in a very dejected melancholy posture;—Eutracia was sitting near her, that lady, it seems, having never quitted her since the unfortunate visit they made together at mrs. Flounceit's; but as the discourse between them consisted only of complaints on the one side, and persuasions to moderation on the other, I think it not material enough to be inserted.

I had not been in the room above a quarter of an hour before a servant presented a letter to Deidamia,—it was from her husband, and contained these lines:

TO DEIDAMIA.

“ MADAM,

“ I Am determin'd to live easy, which I am certainly is utterly impracticable for me to do with you, after what pass'd yesterday between us;—what I then said in heat of passion, I now repeat in cool blood, and on the most mature deliberation.—In fine, an eternal disunion must be the consequence of your behaviour, nor should the tongues of angels dissuade me from this resolution;—you will do well to bear it with patience, as the misfortune, if it be

“ one

“ one, has happen’d entirely thro’ your own
“ fault.

“ To leave you no just reason to complain, I
“ shall order the jointure, settled on you by our
“ marriage articles, to be regularly paid to you
“ as though I were no more; and shall resign to
“ you all the plate, linen and household furniture,
“ excepting only my books, the India chest and
“ buree in my dressing-room.

“ As to our children,—the boy I shall take un-
“ der my care, —the girl I leave to yours, and
“ shall also add one hundred pounds per annum
“ to the abovemention’d jointure, for her mainte-
“ nance and education.

“ Farewel for ever!—As we no more must
“ meet in love, it will be highly improper, and I
“ think could not be very agreeable to either of
“ us, to meet at all,—I shall therefore refrain,
“ as much as possible, going to any of those places
“ you are accustom’d to frequent,—and hope you
“ will have prudence enough to take the same
“ precaution in avoiding me,—especially when I
“ tell you, that it is the only thing in which you
“ can now oblige

“ Your ill-treated husband,

“ MEROVEUS.

“ P. S. I shall send to-morrow for the things
“ I mention’d.”

My fair readers will be the best judges of what Deidamia felt on finding her husband had taken a resolution which could not but give the most mortal stab both to her love and pride;—she paus’d a little after having read it, then gave it to Eutracia, crying out at the same time with the greatest emphasis,

Deidamia. “ See there, my dear Eutracia,—
“ this wicked husband is the sole aggressor, yet pre-
“ tends to be the person who has reason to resent?”

That

That you
could not
proaches a
and when
Eutracia
to proce
man!”
Deidamia
Eutracia
write h
ears ting
Deidamia
be a wi
She th
ask’d him
letter wa
reply’d;

Footma
ver it is
ster ord
hence a
linen w
Deidamia
till I h
messag
The fe
her com
she sat d
per, and

“ Cru
“ I F
“ I sh
“ that I
“ fectio
“ woul

That young lady, who was all fire and spirit, could not forbear loading Meroveus with reproaches at the end of every paragraph she read; and when she had finish'd, said to Deidamia,

Eutracia. ‘ And how, my dear, do you intend to proceed with this base, this most injurious man?’

Deidamia. ‘ Indeed I know not.’

Eutracia. ‘ If I were in your place, I would write him such an answer as should make his ears tingle.’

Deidamia. ‘ Alas, you know not what it is to be a wife! — but I will write, however.’

She then rung her bell for the footman, and ask'd him whether the person who brought the letter waited for an answer; — to which he reply'd,

Footman. ‘ No, madam, he only bid me deliver it into your own hands, and told me my master order'd me to come to him about two hours hence at George's coffee-house, and bring some linen with me.’

Deidamia. ‘ ’Tis very well; — but do not go 'till I have spoke to you again; — I have a message to send by you.’

The fellow assur'd her he would not fail to obey her commands, and withdrew; — after which she sat down to her escrutore, took pen and paper, and began to write in the following terms:

To MEROVEUS.

“ Cruel and unjust, yet still dear MEROVEUS,

“ If there needed any other proof than that I shameful one I yesterday was witness of, that I am miserable in the total loss of your affection, the letter I have just now received would be a convincing one. — What, —

“ after

" after seven years conjugal tenderness, perfect
 " and sincere on my side, and well dissembled
 " on yours, can you entertain a thought of part-
 " ing! — Of tearing a family to pieces which
 " has hitherto lived so respectable in the world!
 " — Must I be doom'd to mourn a husband's
 " loss even while that husband lives! — Must
 " my son be bred an alien to his mother, and my
 " daughter a stranger to her father! — O
 " think, Meroveus! and if no consideration of
 " me has any weight, let that of your own repu-
 " tation, and the interest of our children, prevail
 " on you to alter this cruel resolution! —
 " We may, at least, live civilly together, if not
 " with the same fondness as before this accident.
 " — Yet why should we not! — I am wil-
 " ling to meet you more than half way in love.
 " — You cannot deny but you have wrong-
 " ed me in the most tender point: I confess I was
 " too rash in the manner of detecting you; —
 " we both have been to blame; — what is
 " done cannot be recall'd; — but it may be re-
 " pented of; — let us exchange forgiveness, and
 " endeavour to forget what is past.
 " There was a time when every little ailment
 " felt by your Deidamia gave equal pain to you!
 " — Oh can you then throw off at once all
 " pity, all humanity, all remorse, for the ago-
 " nies you cannot but be sensible my poor tor-
 " mented heart now labours under! — No,
 " — 'tis impossible, — reason, honour and
 " good-nature, forbid it! — you will return,
 " accept the pardon I shall with joy bestow; and,
 " in return, vouchsafe me yours. — Let not
 " my hopes deceive me; — I am sure they will
 " not, if you will suffer yourself to reflect seri-
 " ously on the unhappy consequences that must
 " infal-

" infallibly
 " has been
 " W
 " "

This sh
 proved of
 demn'd th
 — D
 opinion, a
 know her
 to his han
 say withal
 After
 into some
 husband
 wife; —
 ther infor
 and besid
 my own t
 without
 day.

Accord
 poor De
 walking
 rooms in
 fresh aga
 lay open
 were as !

" M
 " I Ha
 " I w
 " ner I

“ infallibly attend a separation from her whoever
“ has been, and desires to continue,
“ With the greatest sincerity,
“ Your most faithful, and
“ Most affectionate wife,
“ DEIDAMIA.

This she communicated to Eutracia, who approved of the former part of it, but highly condemn'd the latter, as thinking it too submissive.

— Deidamia, however, was of a different opinion, and the footman coming in soon after to know her commands, she seal'd it up and put it into his hands to deliver to his master, bidding him say withal that she was very much indisposed.

After he was gone, the ladies began to enter into some dispute concerning the authority of a husband and the duty that was expected from a wife ;—but as I could promise myself no farther information by their discourse on this subject, and besides, remembering I had some business of my own to dispatch, I left the place that instant, not without an intention to return thither the next day.

Accordingly I went in the morning, and found poor Deidamia almost drown'd in tears, and walking backwards and forwards in one of her rooms in a distracted posture ; the cause of these fresh agonies I easily perceived by a letter which lay open on the table,—the contents whereof were as follow :

To DEIDAMIA.

“ MADAM,
“ I Have been in some debate within my mind,
“ whether to answer your epistle in the manner I now do, or not to answer it at all, would
“ be

“ be the most effectual means to prevent your giving me or yourself any future trouble ; — you find I have pursued the former of these methods, and hope you will have discretion enough not to involve me in a second dilemma on this score.

“ Be assured that I did not resolve on a final separation without having well weigh'd the consequences attending it, and find them such as can no way come in competition with my peace of mind, without which life would be a curse, — my bed a bed of thorns, — my table a desert, — my house a hell, and every friend that came to visit, a fury to torment me.

“ See the reverse your jealous folly has occasion'd ; — tax me not, therefore, with ingratitude ; — a thousand times you have confess'd you thought yourself as happy as a woman could be, and it is certain you were truly so. — During the whole course of the years we lived together you never had the least shadow of a cause to complain of my want either of respect or tenderness : — If I indulged any pleasures, which I imagin'd would give you disquiet, I took care to be very private in them ; — Why then did you suffer yourself to be led by an idle curiosity to pry into secrets which the discovery of must give you pain, and possibly prove the total destruction of that love which once you call'd your greatest blessing ?

“ It is doubtless best for both of us, as you rightly enough observe, to forget what is past ; but am far from thinking it can be done by the way you mean : — no, to forget can only be accomplish'd by avoiding each other's presence, and ceasing all kind of communication between us, — I shall therefore give orders

“ to

“ to my
“ or me
“ fire yo
“ last y
“ wel, l
“ sphere

After
what pa
tho' I sta
forbear i
discourse
plain'd ;
would fa
ment and
thought
love ove
the one a
an affect

Whet
to move
I cannot
she reti
she is b
heart ma
usual con

Is some
much
least w
with a

A S d
have
ports I

“ to my servant to charge himself with no letter
“ or message you may think fit to send, and de-
“ sire you will assure yourself that this is the very
“ last you ever shall receive from me.—Fare-
“ wel, I wish you all happiness in any other
“ sphere of life than that you lately lived in with
“ **MEROVEUS.**”

After having examined this epistle, I listen'd to what pass'd between Eutracia and Deidamia ; but tho' I staid 'till my Tablets were crowded, I shall forbear inserting the particulars of these ladies discourse, for reasons which will be hereafter explain'd ; and only say in general, that Eutracia would fain have spirited up her friend to resentment and disdain against a husband whom she thought so unworthy of her ; that Deidamia's love overcame her sex's pride ; and, in fine, that the one argued like a virgin, and the other like an affectionate wife.

Whether Deidamia made any further attempts to move her obdurate husband to a reconciliation I cannot be positive ; but believe she did not, for she retired soon after into the country, whence she is but lately return'd, and, whatever her heart may endure, has very much regain'd her usual composure of countenance and behaviour.

C H A P. VII.

*Is somewhat more concise than ordinary, but very
much to the purpose, and will be found not the
least worthy of any in the book of being regarded
with attention.*

AS during the course of these lucubrations I have been extremely circumstantial in the reports I have made, the reader has a right to be surprised

surprised that I omitted the discourse between Deidamia and Eutracia ; — I shall therefore, according to my promise, relate my motive for so doing, and flatter myself it is such as will render me perfectly excuseable in this point.

Much about the time of the adventure related in the two preceding chapters, I happen'd to be witness of a conversation, which though between different persons, and on a very different occasion, was still on the subject of marriage, the authority of a husband, and the submission expected from a wife ; so seem'd to me to have a certain sameness in it which I thought would be rather tiresome than agreeable to the ear, and for that reason left out the former, and made choice of the latter, as of the two the most interesting.

Two sisters, whose characters I present to the public under the names of Flavia and Celemena, have both of them a tolerable share of beauty, but no other qualification, either natural or acquired, that could entitle them to the hope of an elevated station ; — yet, by the benevolent aspect of their happy planets, are they become the brides of Alcandor and Thelamont, persons distinguished in the world by their birth and fortune, and still more so by the greatness of their merit.

These nuptials, so astonishing to the town, and which happen'd soon after one another, gave me a curiosity to discover, by the help of my Invisibility, in what fashion the ladies would behave themselves in a sphere of life so altogether new to them, and so little expected, even in their vainest wishes, ever to arrive at.

Flavia was the eldest, and it was to her I made my first visit ; — she was in her dressing-room, sitting at her toylet, with her waiting-maid behind her, giving the finishing stroke to her head tyre. — Thelamont was also there, and stood leaning his elbow

elbow
faction
in the g
wards h
Flavi
‘ more
‘ I am
‘ and it
‘ contra
Thela
Flavia
‘ terme
Thela
‘ no mo
‘ had a
‘ plai

With
and she

Flavi
‘ so teaf
‘ times.
‘ kerchi
Maid.
‘ say yo
Flavia
‘ shew t
Maid.
‘ shew t
Flavia
‘ of my
Maid.
‘ knew
‘ double
Just as
against th
Celemen
her sister
of their b

elbow on a buree, with a good deal of dissatisfaction in his countenance, while she kept looking in the glass, and, without turning her head towards him, said,

Flavia. ‘ Prithee, Thelamont, let us talk no more of this stuff,—I am quite sick of it;—I am certainly the best judge of these things, and it is in vain to persuade me, for I will not be contradicted.’

Thelamont. ‘ You will not then oblige me?’

Flavia. ‘ Positively no;—not when you intermeddle in these affairs.’

Thelamont. ‘ Well then, madam, I shall say no more; but must tell you, that I thought I had a right to expect this proof of your com-plaisance.’

With these words he flung out of the room, and she said to herself.

Flavia. ‘ Pish;—Was there ever any thing so teasing!—Men are mighty foolish sometimes.—Katherine, bring me my gauze hand-kerchief.’

Maid. ‘ Oh, ma’am, did not your ladyship say you would wear your new tippet to-day?’

Flavia. ‘ Hah.—Yes,—no,—it will shew too much of my neck?’

Maid. ‘ Oh, ma’am,—your ladyship cannot shew too much of so beautiful a part.’

Flavia. ‘ That’s true;—but I scratch’d one of my breasts with a pin this morning.’

Maid. ‘ Oh the ugly pin;—I wish I knew which it was, that I might crook it quite double and throw it in the fire.’

Just as the maid had express’d her resentment against the weapon that had wounded her mistress, Celemena came into the room, and, after saluting her sister with a freedom suitable to the nearness of their blood and friendship, said to her,

Celestina. ‘ What is the matter, my dear sister ?—you do not look pleas’d to-day.’

Flavia. ‘ Umph.—No,—not very well pleas’d; —nor, indeed, much displeas’d.’

Celestina. ‘ I met Thelamont going out as I came in,—I thought he seem’d more reserv’d than usual, and in a very ill humour.’

Flavia. ‘ If he chuses to be so, it would be a pity any one should attempt to put him out of it.’

Celestina. ‘ I hope no misunderstanding has happen’d between you ?

Flavia. ‘ No, no,—we understand one another pretty well; —I understand that he would fain pretend to take upon him the government of my actions,—and he understands that I will not let him do it; —so we have exchanged some piquant words this morning, that’s all.’

Celestina. ‘ Have a care sister,—quarrels in the beginning of marriage promise but little felicity in the continuance of that state.’

Flavia. ‘ That’s true; —but ’tis very provoking when a man will needs interfere in things he has no manner of concern with.’

Celestina. ‘ Pray what was the subject of your dispute,—if it be not too great a secret?’

Flavia. ‘ Why you must know he wants me to leave off putting any Carmine upon my cheeks,—calls it nasty daubing, and says I should be a thousand times handsomer without it.’

Celestina. ‘ I can see nothing extraordinary in this; —there are many men who have an utter aversion to a woman’s using any art to her complexion.’

Flavia. ‘ They may cry out against it; but yet I am sure it is frequently owing to art that

‘ they
‘ upon
‘ a lustre
‘ would
‘ are so
‘ like us
‘ they m
‘ imagin
‘ ty that
‘ which
‘ *Celeste*
‘ howeve
‘ case,
‘ ture m
‘ row’d
‘ you tru
‘ this lig
‘ you nee
‘ *Flavia.*
‘ Oh the
‘ whole c
‘ *Celeste*
‘ cere, a
‘ woman
‘ *Flavia.*
‘ with my
‘ *Celeste*
‘ I am su
‘ I should
‘ again, t
‘ stow’d u
‘ sex, I w
‘ him, bu
‘ dres tha
‘ der of m
‘ *Flavia.*

they fall so much in love with us ;—a little red upon the cheeks gives a sparkle to the eyes, and a lustre to all the features, which otherwise would appear flat and languid ;—but they are so foolish as not to consider this ;—they like us as they see us altogether, and though they may be sensible we are painted, never once imagine it is to that necessary auxiliary to beauty that we are chiefly indebted for those charms which attract their admiration.'

Cleomena. ' Suppose it as you say, which however I am far from allowing to be always the case, Thelamont has now seen you such as nature made you, the night wears off that borrowed lustre, and the morning shews you what you truly are ; and if he approves of you in this light, I know of no other person whom you need be studious to please.'

Flavia. ' I am of a quite different opinion.— Oh the joy of being gaz'd at, and follow'd by a whole crowded Mall.'

Cleomena. ' Perhaps to laugh ;—but if sincere, a very empty joy, and what a married woman ought not to be too ambitious of.'

Flavia. ' So then you would have me comply with my Husband's request ?'

Cleomena. ' Indeed I would advise you to it :— I am sure if Alcandor express'd a desire that I should cut off my hair, and never let it grow again, though it is the gift of nature, and bestow'd upon me as the greatest ornament of our sex, I would not hesitate one moment to obey him, but be content to wear no other head-dress than a close mob during the whole remainder of my life.'

Flavia. ' Then you are a fool.'

Celemena. ‘ In this point I do not think I am ;—
‘ for besides that duty which the law exacts from
‘ every wife to her husband, there are other rea-
‘ sons which would oblige me to refuse nothing
‘ to Alcandor.’

She accompany’d these words with a very significant look, which Flavia observing, ordered her maid, who had been all this time in the room, to withdraw ; and, as soon as she was gone, replied to what her sister had said in these terms :

Flavia. ‘ I know what you would say ;— you
‘ would infer, that because Alcandor and Thela-
‘ mont married us without fortunes, we are there-
‘ fore bound to be their slaves.’

Celemena. ‘ Not so,—and I dare believe that
‘ neither of them will ever require any submissi-
‘ ons from us, but such as if we had always been
‘ their equals would very well become us to
‘ grant.’

Flavia. ‘ Laird ! — what a bustle you make
‘ about equals ! — Whatever we were before,
‘ marriage has made us now their equals ;—
‘ and for my own part, I shall never submit to do
‘ any thing Thelamont requires of me, unless
‘ my own inclination happens to concur.’

Celemena. ‘ But do you apprehend no ill con-
‘ sequences from repeated contradictions ?

Flavia. ‘ Not in the least ; — he cannot un-
‘ marry me again ; — if he should hate me
‘ never so much I must still be maintain’d as his
‘ wife, and should give myself no pain about any
‘ thing else.’

Celemena. ‘ Oh, sister, I am amaz’d to hear
‘ you talk in this manner ! — Have you been
‘ married but one month, and can already for-
‘ get the unhappiness of our single state,— our
‘ scanty and precarious dependence,— the diffi-

‘ culties

culties we found to supply ourselves with even the common necessities of life!—We made, indeed, a kind of tawdry shew when we appear'd abroad; but how was our table pinch'd for it at home.—Present exigencies and future poverty stared us in the face;—and is there no love, no gratitude, due from us to the men who snatch'd us from that scene of misery, and raised us to opulence, grandeur and refine't!?

Flavia. ‘ Fish;—they married us to please themselves, not out of pity to our wants.—But let us have no more of this dull stuff;—you must go with me to mrs. Rakelove's route to night, —it is the first she has had, and I promis'd her to bring all the company I could.’

Cletemena. ‘ Indeed you must excuse me.’

Flavia. ‘ For what reason?’

Cletemena. ‘ My dear Alcandor sups at home, and I cannot be abroad.’

Flavia. ‘ Heavens!—how strangely silly you are grown!—your dear Alcandor sups at home. —What then, he did not marry you to make you a cook!—You do not dress his victuals?’

Cletemena. ‘ No, but he married me to make me a companion at his victuals; and while he continues to desire my presence, as I flatter myself he always will, I shall never form any pretences to be absent.’

The face of Flavia grew more red than the carmine had made it, on finding in her sister sentiments so opposite to her own; but was prevented from making any answer by the entrance of a servant, who told her that some ladies were come to visit her, on which she went, accompanied by Cletemena, into the dining room, in order to receive them.

Thus ended the conversation I mentioned, and by it the reader may judge which of these two sisters had the greatest share of prudence, best deserved her good fortune, and was most likely to enjoy a long continuance of it.

C H A P. VIII.

Presents the publick with the account of an incident which cannot but be deeply affecting to the youth of both sexes, and no less remarkable in its event than any the Author's Invisibilityship ever enabled him to discover.

AMONG all the various deceptions which are carried on in this great world, I know of none more cruel, and more liable to be attended with the worst of consequences, than those practised in the affairs of love;— yet it is a crime which passes with impunity, and is scarce censured by any but the persons injured by it and their particular friends and confidants.

Even the ladies, generally speaking, for there is no rule without some exceptions, are so little the friends of each other, that we rarely find them taking up the quarrel of their sex in this point;—on the contrary, they are apt to absolve the vow-breaker, and let the whole blame fall on the believer:— a man who has triumph'd over the credulity of an hundred women, sees himself not less suspected; and sometimes the number of past conquests shall serve him as a recommendation, and be a meaſs of his attaining new ones.

Perjury is deem'd but a venial transgression in this case; — few think that oaths and imprecations, when dictated by the heat of an amorous inclina-

inclination
terms, are
ever words of

‘ Jove

This
is not ho
I am for
eiter thro
nature, their love

I hope
part of v
to such a
than in t
ness of
are, or c
ristics of

A you
Syrenia,
quisite t
had the
set of fe
complex
and had
and mie
propriet
of her p
moderate
her ow
good œ
her in a
of life.

Prop
to her b

inclination, tho' formed in the most binding terms, and utter'd in the most solemn manner, are ever register'd in heaven,—according to the words of the poet, who merrily says,

‘ Jove only laughs when lovers swear.’

This vice, as I must take the liberty to call it, is not however wholly confined to the male sex; I am sorry to observe that those of the other, either through pride, vanity, or an inconstancy of nature, are sometimes found guilty of deluding their lovers with fallacious expectations.

I hope also to be forgiven by the more discreet part of womankind, when I say that a propensity to such a behaviour is yet less excusable in them than in the men, as a perfect innocence, a sweetness of disposition, and a simplicity of manners are, or ought to be, the distinguishing characteristics of the fair sex.

A young lady, to whom I shall give the name of Syrenia, was endowed by nature with every requisite to command love and admiration;—she had the finest eyes in the world,—a very regular set of features, fine hair, and a most delicate complexion;—was tall of stature, well shaped, and had somewhat peculiarly attractive in her air and mien.—Fortune had not been altogether so propitious to her;—through the extravagancies of her parents she was left in possession of a very moderate fortune;—it was, however, entirely at her own disposal, and sufficient, with the good œconomy she was mistress of, to support her in a very genteel, though not a grand way of life.

Proposals of marriage had often been made to her by several eminent and wealthy citizens;

but she rejected them all, and despis'd the thoughts not only of a shop, but also of all other callings and occupations whatever; — ambition was the predominant passion of her soul, and she had vanity enough to think that her birth, her person and accomplishments were such as might very well compensate for the smallness of her fortune, and entitle her to higher expectations.

She had lived 'till the age of twenty-three without having any offer of the kind she hoped; — but about the expiration of that æra, a young gentleman, call'd Rossano, happening to see her at the house of a relation whom he visited, became violently in love with her, and soon after finding means to get himself introduced, made a declaration of his passion; to which, knowing what and who he was, she gave all the encouragement he could wish, or that was befitting the character of a modest woman.

It would, indeed, have been much to be wondered at, if the addresses of Rossano had not been acceptable to her; — he is descended from a very antient and worthy family, has an estate of eight hundred pounds per annum, intirely free from any incumbrance, either mortgage, dowry, or portions to be paid out of it; — his person and behaviour are extremely agreeable; and, to add to all this, has deservedly the reputation of a man of strict honour, and more sobriety than could be expected from his years and the dissoluteness of the present times.

The sincerity and warmth of his affection making him very strenuous in his pressures, and the advantages she found in a match with him rendering her complying, they were beginning to talk of ordering articles for their marriage to be drawn

drawn up
to his est
the coun
Thou
yet he
fight of
weeks, w
little less
their pa
seem'd t
sions of
had wa
that wh
with him

It is
profess'd
and that
lay'd the
siderable
grin she
very foo
far differ

The
and so
I shall r
of it by
by the l

She
of her a
met and
lia, and
equally
towards
ness. —
and dow
took th
their re
more of

drawn up, when an unexpected accident, relating to his estate, obliged him to go immediately into the country.

Though he proposed to stay but a short time, yet he could not think of being deprived of the sight of his beloved Syrenia, even for a few weeks, without an infinity of grief.—She testified little less regret for this enforced separation ;—their parting was extremely moving,—each seem'd to endeavour to outvie the other in expressions of tenderness ; and the only consolation he had was, the repeated assurances she gave him, that wherever he went he carried her heart along with him.

It is highly probable, that the affection she profess'd for him was at that time perfectly sincere, and that she look'd upon the accident which delay'd the celebration of their nuptials as no inconsiderable misfortune to her ; but whatever chagrin she might feel at first on this account, it was very soon dissipated, and gave way to ideas of a far different nature.

The motive which brought about so sudden, and so extraordinary a change in her sentiments, I shall relate, as I was afterwards fully inform'd of it by the several conversations I was present at by the help of my Invisibility.

She was one morning in the Park with a lady of her acquaintance call'd Delia, where they were met and join'd by a young officer, brother to Delia, and a gentleman who was with him, and equally a stranger to both the ladies, but behaved towards them with the greatest respect and politeness.—They walk'd two or three turns up and down the Mall, after which the gentlemen took their leave, and Syrenia and Delia went to their respective habitations, without thinking any more of what had pass'd during their promenade.

Little, indeed, could either of them apprehend the consequences of this adventure;—but the next day, pretty early in the forenoon, Syrenia was surprized with a visit from Delia, who came running into her apartment without any ceremony,—crying out as she enter'd,

Delia. ‘ Joy to you, my dear;—I come to wish you joy!

Syrenia. ‘ Of what! — for I see no other subject of joy than what I always feel on seeing you.’

Delia. ‘ Me!—no, no,—a thousand such as me are quite out of the question;— but I have the pleasure to congratulate you on the greatest conquest your beauty ever made, or perhaps ever can make!’

Syrenia. ‘ You are got into a vein of raillery this morning.’

Delia. ‘ No, upon my honour I never was more serious.—Do you not remember the fine gentleman that was with my brother yesterday in the Mall?’

Syrenia. ‘ Yes;—you know they join'd company with us.’

Delia. ‘ His name is Leontine;—he is the eldest son of his father, and heir apparent to three thousand pounds a year:—you saw his person;—for my part I think nothing can be more agreeable; and my brother tells me he is the most accomplish'd man he ever knew.’

Syrenia. ‘ Well,—and what is all this to me?’

Delia. ‘ It is all to you.—It seems he saw you last Sunday at Westminster-Abbey, fell violently in love with you, and would have follow'd to have seen where you liv'd, but was prevented by some gentlemen of his acquaintance, who that

that in
with t
Syren
there;
Delia.
you as
Syren
came
his hea
to his
Delia.
brothe
—Aft
togeth
sand q
fortun
may b
tage:-
of the
intreat
found
me to
fully p
Syren
Delia.
my de
Syren
I con
tunes
Delia.
it is n
Syren
myself
sider
Delia.
when
have
ing.

‘ that instant laid hold of him and forced him along with them.’

Syrenia. ‘ ‘Tis possible such a one might be there ; but I did not take any notice of him.’

Delia. ‘ That may be, but he took so much of you as not to be able to sleep ever since.’

Syrenia. ‘ Very romantic truly.—But pray how came you so well acquainted with the secrets of his heart, who yesterday seem’d an utter stranger to his person ?’

Delia. ‘ I will tell you the whole affair, as my brother last night came and inform’d me of it.—After they had left us they went and dined together at a tavern :—Leontine ask’d a thousand questions concerning your family,—your fortune, and your character ;---all which, you may be sure were answer’d not to your disadvantage :---he then made my brother the confident of the passion you had inspir’d him with, and intreated him to use his interest with me, as he found I was pretty intimate with you, to engage me to introduce him to you, which I have faithfully promised to do.’

Syrenia. ‘ What without my consent ?’

Delia. ‘ I hoped to be forgiven ;---such an offer, my dear, is not to be rejected.’

Syrenia. ‘ It is much beyond my expectations, I confess ;---but the disparity between our fortunes is too great.’

Delia. ‘ If he thinks your person an equivalent, it is not your busines to make objections !’

Syrenia. ‘ That is true ;---and if I could flatter myself he were really sincere :---but I will consider on it.’

Delia. ‘ It will be time enough for you consider when you have heard what he has to say ; for I have promised to bring you together this evening.’

Syrenia.

Syrenia. ' This evening! ---as how!'

Delia. ' As thus: ---I invite you to sup with me to-night, ---my brother and Leontine shall come in as if by accident; ---neither your pride nor your modesty has any thing to scruple; for I assure you I will not let even my brother know that I have previously acquainted you with any thing of the matter.'

Syrenia. ' Well, ---on that condition I will come.'

Delia. ' Indeed, my dear, I should think you very much to blame to turn your back on a prospect so highly advantageous; ---for though you are well born, ---well accomplish'd, ---are handsome, and have some fortune of your own, ---yet the three first of these, as men now think of marriage, weigh but lightly against what they call the incumbrance of a wife; ---and as to the latter, you know, it will not entitle you to a coach and six.'

Syrenia. ' The justice of what you say cannot be denied; ---but I would do nothing that should occasion my character being called in question, nor would seem too forward, though to promote the highest expectations; ---therefore, my dear Delia, remember I depend on your prudence.'

Delia. ' In this you safely may: ---I know too well what is owing to my sex, and the cruel aspersions men are apt to throw on our most innocent freedoms, not to be extremely cautious in avoiding giving the least room for censure.'

Syrenia. Indeed, my dear, my observation on your own conduct ought to put to silence all my doubts on that score; and whatever is the event of this affair, I shall always gratefully

fully
me.
Delia.
your
sensible
to con
—b
my br
not,
The
these w
glow on
transpon
and wa
some d
thought

Syren
so fin
some;
agree
imagi
the h
rathe
day,
who
have
have

Here
rising i
this ex

Syren
far w
distra
when
may
death

‘ fully acknowledge your good wishes towards
‘ me.’

Delia. ‘ If it succeeds I shall be a sharer in
‘ your good fortune, as nothing gives me a more
‘ sensible satisfaction than to have it in my power
‘ to contribute to the happiness of my friends :
‘ —but I must leave you,—I promis’d to let
‘ my brother know whether you could come or
‘ not, that he may apprise Leontine of it.’

The good-natur’d Delia went away in speaking these words ; but I could easily perceive, by the glow on Syrenia’s cheeks, how much she was transported with the purpose of her visit ;—and was yet more confirm’d of her being so by some disjointed soliloquies she utter’d when she thought there was no witness of what she said.

Syrenia. ‘ Three thousand pounds a year, and
‘ so fine a gentleman as Leontine !—so hand-
‘ some,—so polite,—so every thing that is
‘ agreeable ;—If he is as sincere as Delia
‘ imagines him to be, I shall have cause to bless
‘ the hour I went to Westminster-Abbey ;—or
‘ rather that which carried me to the Park yester-
‘ day, without which he might never have known
‘ who I was, or where to find me, and should
‘ have lost all the advantage my good stars seem to
‘ have decreed for me !’

Here she ceas’d to speak, other sort of emotions rising in her mind, to which she gave a loose in this exclamation.

Syrenia. ‘ It was an unlucky thing I went so
‘ far with Roffano, —the poor man loves me to
‘ distraction,—he will certainly break his heart
‘ when he finds I have forsaken him ;—and, it
‘ may be, reproach me as the occasion of his
‘ death.’

On this her countenance seem'd a little disconcerted ; but it soon wore off, and after a short pause went on thus :

Syrenia. ‘ I am glad, however, that no contract has pass'd between us ; the encouragement I gave his passion, and the verbal promises I made him, need be no impediment to my accepting a better offer. — It will be prudence in me, however, not to throw him off, nor give him any room to suspect I have less affection for him than I had, 'till I am well assured that Leontine is in earnest.’

This was enough to shew me the principle and disposition of *Syrenia*, both which, indeed, were so little pleasing to me, that I had not patience to stay with her any longer, but quitted her apartment with a contempt, which could she have been sensible of, would no doubt have given her some mortification.

I made one of the company that night at *Delia's* however ; but as it could not be expected, that in a meeting which was to pass for casual, there should be any conversation except on general topics, I reap'd no other benefit by being present, than to be convinced that *Leontine*, by the glances he took every opportunity of casting at *Syrenia*, was indeed very much enamour'd and that she spared no pains to make him more so.

The next day he went with the brother of *Delia* to visit her, and the succeeding one took the liberty of going thither alone and made a declaration of his passion, which she, having well prepared herself with answers, received in such a manner as neither to reject, nor with too much readiness encourage.

The ice once broke, he prosecuted his addresses with so much vigour and assiduity, that she thought it would be no breach of modesty to give him

room

room to
her ;—by
kind on e
tion and
forfeiting
valued ho
as if forc
within, v
ceal, but

Thus
though a
never on
as she a
and inc

It is c
was gre
fion, by
Delia, t
of disbu
tion to h

From
it was n
much in
great re
would n
thing o
out hav
bation o
wife ; a
letters
country
quite fo
third, o
terms.

She
easy ap
tleman
tine wa

room to hope he was not altogether indifferent to her ;—by degrees, therefore, she became more kind on every visit he made, but did it with caution and reserve, neither by her looks or words forfeiting that character of discretion she so much valued herself upon,—dropping only some hints, as if forced from her, from a fund of tenderness within, which she would fain endeavour to conceal, but had not the power of doing it.

Thus artful in appearing artless, Leontine, though a man of very good sense and penetration, never once suspected she was any other than such as she affected to be,—plain, simple, generous, and incapable of disquising her sentiments.

It is certain, indeed, that her natural cunning was greatly assisted how to proceed on this occasion, by the intelligence she daily received from Delia, to whose brother Leontine made no scruple of disburthening all that pass'd in his heart in relation to his passion for Syrenia.

From this faithful friend she learn'd, that tho' it was not to be doubted but that Leontine was as much in love with her as man could be, yet the great respect and reverence he had for his father would not permit him to think of venturing on a thing of so much consequence as marriage, without having first obtained his consent, and approbation of the woman he made choice of for a wife ; and that to this end he had already sent two letters to his father, who lived entirely in the country ; but the answers he received not being quite so satisfactory as he wish'd, he had wrote a third, dictated in the most passionate and pressing terms.

She could not avoid being under some very uneasy apprehensions on the score of this old gentleman, and also fear'd that the passion Leontine was inspired with might not of itself be strong enough

enough to get the better of that obedience owing from him to a father's will,---she therefore wish'd to interest his good-nature and generosity in her favour, and judged that the surest way to secure his affection was to make him confident of her's.

But the means of accomplishing this was a difficulty she knew not presently how to get over ; ---to confess by word of mouth she loved him seem'd too great a breach of modesty, especially as his courtship to her had not yet been of any long continuance ; and to get him inform'd of it by Delia, she thought would be the same thing, as he would doubtless imagine it was not done without her privity and consent ; ---besides she knew not whether that lady would approve of such a step. ---Being one day desired by him to favour him with a tune on her spinnet, she entertain'd him with an air out of the *Opera of Arsinoe*, the first in the Italian taste ever exhibited on the English stage, and, in my opinion, has been exceeded by none that have come after it. ---The words she sung to her instrument were these :

- Wanton zephir softly blowing,
- Watching, catching, whispering, going,
- Bear in sighs my soul away :
- Tell Ormondo what I feel,
- Tell him how his chains I wear,
- Tell him all my grief and care ;
- Gently stealing,
- And revealing,
- More of love than I can say.'

But though Leontine extoll'd both the music and the voice which gave it utterance, yet he shew'd no indication of imagining she had any design of flattering his passion in the choice she made of this song ; ---this making her perceive
she

she must
soon pre
sing her
the succe
execution.

Having
at her e
without
the follo

- Wit, i
- To de
- But ah
- Nor w
- Wealth
- The se
- My n
- And lo
- Let me
- And ba
- Left b
- I fall t
- But, o
- To aid
- Speaks
- And w
- 'Tis f
- I must

This
was a fin
soul, she
such a m
pearance
design.

she must be more explicit, her fertile invention soon presented her with a stratagem, which pleasing her fancy at the same time that it promis'd the success she aim'd at, she put it into immediate execution.—It was this :

Having a natural talent for poetry she sat down at her escrutoire, took pen, ink and paper, and without being at the pains of much study wrote the following lines :

The breathings of a love-sick heart.

- Wit, manly beauty, every grace combine,
- To deck the youth I love with charms divine.
- But ah !---my too uncautious heart take heed,
- Nor with gay hopes the growing passion feed ;
- Wealth's the chief idol that mankind adore,
- The sov'reign power they all fall down before,
- My niggard fortune does that charm deny,
- And love alone will not its want supply ;
- Let me then guard each av'nue to my breast,
- And bar all entrance to this dangerous guest ;
- Lest by indulging the presumptuous flame,
- I fall the victim of despair and shame.
- But, oh 'tis vain !—the god of love conspires,
- To aid my Leontine with all his fires,
- Speaks in his voice and sparkles in his eyes,
- And what he sweetly forces, justifies.

- 'Tis sure determin'd in the book of fate,
- I must adore, ev'n tho' he proves ungrate.'

This paper, which she wanted him to believe was a sincere confession of the whole secret of her soul, she contrived should fall into his hands in such a manner as should have too much the appearance of chance to be liable to any suspicion of design.

At

At his next visit, her maid being well instructed by her how to act, ran hastily into the room, and told her that the man whom she order'd to come for his money was below.—Syrenia affected not to understand what she meant, and cry'd,

Syrenia. ‘ What man!—what money !

Maid. ‘ Mr. Sharpely, madam,—your stay-maker.’

Syrenia. ‘ Oh,—now I remember I did bid him come for his money ;—he takes a strange unseasonable time ;—people should always come in a morning on these affairs ;—however I'll see if I can find his bill, and do you carry pen and ink into the parlour, that he may write me a receipt on the back of it.’

On this the maid withdrew, and Syrenia open'd a little desk that stood in the dining room, and beginning to tumble over some writings she had there, as in search of the pretended bill, dexterously slipp'd from among the rest the paper which contain'd the above recited verses, and let it fall to the ground without seeming to observe that any thing was dropp'd ;—then saying she had found what she had look'd for,---shut up the desk in a great hurry,---begg'd Leontine would excuse her absence for a few moments, and went down stairs.

She was no sooner gone than Leontine happening to cast his eyes that way saw the paper, and took it up, as I suppose, with no other intention than to deliver it to Syrenia when she should return ; but it being purposely folded in such a manner that part of the writing appear'd on the outside,—he must have been strangely incurious indeed, if seeing it a poem, and wrote in his mistress's hand, he had forbore examining it.

Never was any transport more visible than in the countenance of Leontine while reading these

delusive

delusive
poet's wo

‘ Kind
‘ All t
‘ It gil
‘ And

Tho' I
the reader
an ear wi
for me to
the one
finding h
dear to
be so.

She to
him time
intended
when she
of it, an
sence by
her stay
of raptu

Leonti
‘ to bec
‘ man,
‘ made

To th
the me
simile,

Syren
‘ pose
‘ the w
Leont
‘ by th
‘ the v
‘ less u
‘ your

delusive stanzas;—his look put me in mind of the poet's words:

- ‘ Kindness has restless charms,
- ‘ All things else but faintly warms;
- ‘ It gilds the lover's servile chain,
- ‘ And makes the slave grow pleas'd and vain.’

Tho' by the particulars I have been repeating, the reader will easily suppose I was both an eye and an ear witness of them, yet it is utterly impossible for me to describe either the looks or attitude of the one or the other, in the joyous surprise of finding himself, as he imagin'd, thus extremely dear to the only woman to whom he wish'd to be so.

She took care to stay so long below as to give him time to read over, more than once, what she intended for his perusal: it was still in his hands when she return'd, but she seem'd to take no notice of it, and was beginning to apologize for her absence by laying the blame on the impertinence of her staymaker; but Leontine, with a gesture full of rapture, interrupted her,—saying,

Leontine. ‘ O, madam,—you must allow me
‘ to become an advocate for this honest trades-
‘ man, since by his fortunate detaining you I am
‘ made the happiest of mankind.

To this, Syrenia affecting not to comprehend the meaning of what he said, reply'd with a smile,

Syrenia. ‘ What riddle is this you are about to
‘ pose me with?—I am the dullest creature in
‘ the world at giving a solution to these things.’

Leontine. ‘ This paper, madam, wafted to me
‘ by the god of love's own hand, has given me
‘ the wish'd for opportunity of proving myself
‘ less unworthy of the blessing I aspire to, than
‘ your doubts suggest.—No, my charming Syre-
‘ nia,

‘ nia, not all the treasures in the world could add
 ‘ one ray of lustre to the graces of your mind
 ‘ and person,---’tis those alone I covet to enjoy,
 ‘ and in possessing them shall be more rich than
 ‘ in possessing both the Indies.’

While he was speaking Syrenia cast her eyes upon the paper and blush’d excessively;---partly perhaps thro’ shame, but more thro’ the pleasure which diffused itself thro’ all her veins, on perceiving, by the behaviour of Leontine, how well the success of her plot had answer’d to the intention of it.

The well dissembled confusion she was in, was an excuse for her not speaking, and Leontine went on to assure her, in the most tender terms, that no consideration whatever should have the power to oblige him to withdraw that firm affection he now vow’d to her, and that he hop’d a very little time would put a final period to all her apprehensions on that score.

What farther conversation passed between them at this time I shall forbear to repeat, as it may be easily guess’d at; and proceed to the conduct of Syrenia in regard to her other lover, who the reader may think I have too long neglected.

The business which call’d Rossano into the country detain’d him there much longer than he had expected, and an unlucky fall from his horse, the very day before he intended to set out for London, occasioned a second delay to his journey; ---this absence of his gave Syrenia a full opportunity of entertaining her new lover, tho’ she received every post a letter from the former, all which she did not fail to answer with that tenderness which might be expected from a woman who had promised to be his wife; still keeping close to her first maxim, not to give any umbrage to the one ’till she was perfectly secure of the other.

All

All im-
moved,
same day
in the ma-
see his be-
her lodgi-
her; but
it was the
was abr-
would re-
not accu-

He w-
at all su-
the stre-
the hou-
fondness
his wish-
and Le-
full view
discour-
on the
seem’d
be with-
why he
which

He w-
sy, as
mand
refused
and he
becom-

Le-
of the
maid,
there
discon-
cover-

All impediments, however, being at last removed, that gentleman arriv'd in town on the same day that Syrenia and Leontine were engag'd in the manner above recited ;— his impatience to see his beloved mistress carried him immedately to her lodgings, — he came while his rival was with her ; but her maid, well knowing how improper it was that they should meet, told him her lady was abroad,—on which he went away, saying he would return in the evening, as he knew she was not accustom'd to stay late from home.

He was doubtless much disappointed, but not at all suspicious of the cause, 'till having cross'd the street he happen'd to cast his eyes back upon the house, either by chance, or possibly through fondness of the place which contain'd the idol of his wishes, — Syrenia was sitting in the window and Leontine very near to her :— Rossano had a full view of both ; but Syrenia was too earnest in discourse to observe him, tho' he stood motionless on the spot where he was for some minutes.— It seem'd not strange to him that a gentleman should be with her, tho' he could find no way to account why he should be denied access to her but one, which stung him to the soul.

He was more than once tempted by his jealousy, as I afterwards discover'd, to return and demand of the maid a reason for his having been refused admittance ; but second thoughts prevail'd, and he went home to deliberate how it would best become him to behave in such a circumstance.

Leontine staid supper, and Syrenia stepping out of the room to give some necessary orders to her maid, was inform'd by her that Rossano had been there and the message he had left :— this greatly disconcerted her ; but after a little pause she recover'd herself enough to give these directions :

Syrenia.

Syrenia. ‘ This is very unlucky, — Leontine will probably stay late; — you must therefore tell Rossano that I am not yet come home, — and that you believe I am gone to the play.’

The maid punctually obey’d these directions, Rossano only reply’d, — that since it had happen’d so, he would do himself the honour to breakfast with her lady the next morning, — and then departed seemingly well satisfied.

But tho’ he forbore giving any indications of his jealousy to this girl, he doubted not but that the second repulse was owing to the same motive the first had been; — resolving, however, to be more fully convinced, he posted his servant, whom he had brought with him for that purpose, under a lamp a few doors from the house where Syrenia lodged, charging him to observe carefully who came in or out, and if he saw a gentleman in black velvet and a bag wig, to follow him wherever he went, find out his name if possible, and bring him an exact account.

Leontine was so much charm’d with the discovery he had made of Syrenia’s affection, that he quitted her apartment not ’till the night was very far advanced. — Rossano’s servant, however, kept close to his stand, ’till a chair being call’d, he saw the gentleman his master had described go into it; — he follow’d, and as soon as Leontine had enter’d the house where he lodg’d, and the door was shut, ask’d the chairmen if they knew the gentleman they had carried; but they answering in the negative, and he seeing no house open where he might enquire, could learn nothing farther that night; but early the next morning he went again, and had the address to find out all the particulars that could be expected from him.

Rossano

Rossano
a rival, b
mistress: c
be concer
approach
the next

Syrenia
very well
would no
ing, had
liged to
relation

I am
some bu
things c
tain’d m
this int
shall pr
faithful

Syrenia
ran to
and wit
him in

Syrenia
‘ have
‘ night
‘ deprive
Rossano
‘ was v
‘ fence
‘ and e
‘ play.
Syrenia
‘ there
‘ by b
Rossano
Syrenia
‘ why

Rossano was now assur'd not only that he had a rival, but also a rival highly favour'd by his mistress:—the distraction he was in may easily be conceived; but he dissembled it on his first approach to Syrenia, whom he did not fail to visit the next morning, as he had told her maid.

Syrenia, before she was inform'd of it, knew very well, that missing seeing her that night, he would not let another day pass over without coming, had the artifice to tell Leontine she was obliged to go some few miles out of town to see a relation who she heard was dangerously ill.

I am not a person who live without having some business in the world, yet there are very few things of consequence enough to me to have detain'd me from being a witness of what pass'd in this interview between Rossano and Serenia, and shall present my readers with it as recorded in my faithful tablets.

Syrenia no sooner heard he was there than she ran to the top of the stair-case to receive him, and with the greatest shew of tenderness saluted him in these terms:

Syrenia. ‘ My dear Rossano, how griev'd
‘ have I been for losing the sight of you last
‘ night, after having been so long an age of time
‘ depriv'd of it ! ’

Rossano. ‘ The misfortune, beautiful Serenia,
‘ was wholly mine; for while I moan'd your ab-
‘ sence you doubtless found something to amuse
‘ and entertain you.—I heard you were at the
‘ play.’

Syrenia. ‘ I was so;—but what could I find
‘ there to compensate for the satisfaction I miss'd
‘ by being so unluckily from home ! ’

Rossano. ‘ Were you at Covent-Garden ?

Syrenia. ‘ No;—at Drury-Lane.—But
‘ why do you ask ? ’

Rossano.

Roffano. ‘ Only for a foolish fancy.’

Syrenia. ‘ Nay, I may answer myself that question.—I will lay my life you went in search of me ;—but I chose to go in a dishabille, and sat on the back bench in Burton’s box ;— so it was impossible for you to see me.’

Roffano. ‘ Not so impossible as you imagine, madam :—but I had no need to go to either of the Theatres,—the object I so much languish’d to behold presented itself to me without my taking any pains.’

These words occasioned a visible change in her countenance,—she blush’d excessively, — cast her eyes upon the ground, and had not power to lift them up while she said only,

Syrenia. ‘ What is it you mean ?’

Roffano. ‘ There needs no explanation ;—the disorder you in vain endeavour to conceal shews but too much how well you are acquainted with my meaning.—Ah, Syrenia,— Syrenia,— how did I once flatter myself with an assurance that your heart was mine, inviolably mine ; but now I find my absence has been fatal to me !’

Syrenia. ‘ Forbear to talk thus ;— these suspicions are unjust to me, and cruel to yourself.’

Roffano. ‘ Why then was I last night turn’d from your door !—Why twice repuls’d, while my more happy rival was allow’d the privilege of entertaining you ’till midnight !’

Syrenia. ‘ Who tells you this ?’

Roffano. ‘ My own eyes, madam, were my first intelligencers,— I saw you at that window,— saw also your new favourite, and easily judg’d by both your attitudes what was the subject of your conversation ;—as to the rest, I was in-

‘ inform
‘ had r
‘ The
ed,—th
monstra
against
ter, by
Syren
‘ and h
‘ pecke
‘ here ’
‘ tlema
‘ fancy
‘ light
Roffa
‘ as yo
‘ are u
‘ me as
‘ given,
‘ person
‘ —besi
‘ seconde
Syren
‘ heard
‘ —thin
‘ this is
‘ and ha
Roffa
‘ ment
‘ tain y
‘ when
‘ now
Syren
‘ remem
‘ No
‘ But
Vol.

• inform'd of it by means to which I afterwards
• had recourse.'

The false Syrenia was now absolutely confounded,—there was no giving the lye to ocular demonstration as to the first part of Rossano's charge against her, but she endeavour'd to avoid the latter, by saying,

Syrenia. ' Well, sir, I own I was at home,
• and had order'd myself to be denied; but ex-
• pected not your coming, or knew you had been
• here 'till after you were gone:—as for the gen-
• tleman you saw with me, 'tis your own jealous
• fancy alone that makes you regard him in the
• light of a lover.'

Rossano. ' I grant you did not expect me; but
• as your servant is no stranger to the footing we
• are upon, she would certainly have look'd on
• me as an exception to the general order you had
• given, if she had not known I was no proper
• person to join in the company you had above:
• —besides, you cannot plead ignorance of my
• second visit, yet I was again turn'd back.'

Syrenia. ' You wrong me;—I protest I never
• heard of your being here 'till I was going to bed;
• —think no more therefore of such idle stuff,—
• this is not discourse for two people who love,
• and have so long been absent from each other.'

Rossano. ' Ah, Syrenia!— I wish the treat-
• ment I have received would allow me to enter-
• tain you with any other;— there was a time
• when I could be as gay, perhaps, as he who
• now supplants me in your esteem.'

Syrenia. ' Still harping on the same string;—
• remember what the poet says:

• No signs of love in jealous men remains,
• But that which sick men have of life, their
• pains.'

She had just done repeating these lines when the tea equipage was brought in for breakfast, and Rossano, who I could perceive by his countenance was little pleased with the trifling answers she had made to his reproaches, rose up to take his leave, on which she suddenly catch'd hold of his hand, and with a well counterfeited tenderness in her voice and eyes, said to him,

Syrenia. ‘ You will not go and leave me in this humour.’

Rossano. ‘ Indeed I must ;—— I have this moment thought of a business that requires immediate dispatch.’

Syrenia. ‘ Shall I then see you in the afternoon ?’

Rossano. ‘ I cannot promise.’

He was half way down stairs while speaking these last words, and though she follow'd him two or three steps, and call'd to him to stay, he turn'd not, nor even look'd back upon her, but went hastily out of the house.

I was resolved to see what was his intent, and accompanied him to the house of that kinswoman where he had first seen Syrenia ;— he was beginning to tell her what cause of complaint he had against that lady, but she stopp'd his mouth by saying she was already acquainted with every thing he had to relate, and then proceeded to inform him, that having a friend who lived opposite to Syrenia, she had learn'd that she entertain'd a new lover, who visited her almost every day, and that the neighbourhood believed it would very shortly be a match.

Rossano went from this relation to his own lodgings, where having vented some part of his rage in exclamations on the levity and ingratitude of womankind, he sat down and wrote the following lines :

To

“ S
“ Y
“ am e
“ mean
“ either
“ own
“ tlema
“ these
“ tague
“ whe

This
happeni
the bear

“ S
“ I Ov
“ no
“ believ
“ ture y
“ man ;
“ tensio
“ ment
“ my m
“ pointe

Rossan
when a p
the conte

TO LEONTINE.

“ SIR,

“ YOU have endeavour’d to supplant me in
“ the affection of the woman I loved and
“ am engag’d to marry ; — I need not tell you I
“ mean Syrenia ; — I expect therefore you will
“ either resign all pretensions to her under your
“ own hand, or give such satisfaction as one gen-
“ tleman has a right to demand from another in
“ these cases : — I shall attend you behind Mon-
“ tague-house at eight to-morrow morning, ’till
“ when,

“ Yours,
ROSSANO.

This he sent immediately to Leontine, who
happening to be at home return’d an answer by
the bearer in these terms :

TO ROSSANO.

“ SIR,

“ I Own myself a lover of Syrenia, but know
“ nothing of your courtship to her, nor will
“ believe she is under any engagement of the na-
“ ture you mention, either to you or any other
“ man ; and shall be so far from resigning my pre-
“ tensions, that I will defend them to the last mo-
“ ment of my life ; you may therefore rely on
“ my meeting you at the time and place ap-
“ pointed.

“ Yours,
“ LEONTINE.

Rossano had scarce finish’d reading this billet
when a porter brought him a letter from Syrenia,
the contents whereof were these :

O 2

To

To ROSSANO.

“ My very dear ROSSANO,
 “ YOUR behaviour this morning has thrown
 “ me into disquiets which might excite com-
 “ passion in a heart less devoted to me than I flat-
 “ ter’d myself yours was ; — I thought the love
 “ between us was establish’d on a more solid basis
 “ than to be shook by every puff of jealous ca-
 “ price ; — I doubt not but to convince you that
 “ yours is no other. — If this is so lucky as to
 “ find you at home, or you receive it time enough,
 “ I beg to see you this evening ; for I cannot
 “ bear you should pass another night in such cruel
 “ suspicions of

“ Your faithfully affectionate
 “ SYRENA.”

I perceiv’d he was in some dilemma on reading
 this billet ; — he paus’d a while, — then said,
 Roffano. “ My compliments to the lady,
 and — ”

Then paus’d again, and at last cry’d,
 Roffano. “ Tell her I am engag’d this day,
 “ but will wait on her to-morrow.”

Various reflections seem’d now rolling in the
 mind of this much abus’d lover ; but I left him in
 them, and contented myself with going the next
 morning to the field of battle, in order to see how
 the combatants would behave ; — they were both
 so punctual to the time that it is hard to say which
 of them was first within the lists. — Roffano,
 however, having some idea of Leontine, as he
 had seen him through Syrena’s window, advanced
 towards him, and said,

Roffano. “ I guess, sir, you are the gentleman
 “ I invited hither ? ”

Leontine

Leontine
 name
 Roffano
 Leontine
 find me
 fair Sir
 Roffano
 long
 vows
 Leontine
 the p
 Both
 Rossano
 fortune
 side on
 deeper
 great e
 sword,
 chief t
 hastily
 Roffano
 justific
 vantag
 to fin
 beg
 abroa
 port
 and v
 Leontine
 immed
 in order
 his fide
 happen
 little m
 was a
 wine,
 sleep fo
 of hur

Leontine. ' You are not deceived, sir, if your name be Rossano.'

Rossano. ' The same, sir.'

Leontine. ' Mine then is Leontine, and you find me ready to maintain my pretensions to the fair Syrenia.'

Rossano. ' And I to assert that right which a long series of encouraged courtship and mutual vows have given me.'

Leontine. ' This then is the way we must dispute the prize.'

Both their swords were already drawn, and Rossano, either through superior skill or better fortune, gave his antagonist a slight wound in the side on the first pass, and on the second a much deeper on the right arm, which occasioning a great effusion of blood, he was obliged to drop his sword, on which the other, imagining the mischief to be greater than it really proved, stepped hastily towards him with these words :

Rossano. ' Sir, Though I might expect the justice of my cause would give me some advantage over you, I should be extremely sorry to find it attended with any bad effects,—I beg therefore, as there are scarce any chairs abroad so early, you will give me leave to support you to my lodgings, which are very near, and where you may have immediate assistance.'

Leontine accepted the offer, —a surgeon was immediately called, and his cloaths stripped off in order to have his wounds examined ;— that on his side was not at all deep, and that on his arm happening only among a knot of veins, required little more than a tight bandage for its cure :—he was advised, however, to drink some mull'd wine, and then endeavour to compose himself to sleep for a few hours.—Rossano, with a great deal of humanity and politeness, took care to see this

injunction performed, and on Leontine's requesting it, sent to his lodgings for fresh cloaths and linen for him to put on when he should awake.

As Rossano was retiring to leave his guest to that repose which was thought needful for him, he saw a paper lying on the floor, which he took up, not knowing but it was something belonging to himself ;— but how great was his amazement when he found what it contained,—this being the very verses Syrenia had wrote on Leontine, and had fortuituously been shook out of that gentleman's pocket as his cloaths were hastily thrown to the other side of the room.

'Till now, the love he had bore Syrenia kept him from entertaining any worse opinion of her conduct, than that it was the vanity incident to her sex which alone had made her encourage the addresses of Leontine ; but this plain proof of her inconstancy gave a sudden turn to his sentiments, and changed at once all the tenderness he ever had for her into contempt and hatred.

Leontine also had some uneasy thoughts on the score of Syrenia ;— Rossano seemed to him to be a man of too much honour to assert a falsehood, and began to fear that himself had been deceived in his opinion of the lady's sincerity ;— being less inclined to sleep than to be satisfied in this point, he rung a bell which hung by the bedside, on which Rossano, who was no farther than the next room, went in and asked how he did ;— to which he replied,

Leontine. ‘ So well that I think I need lie here
 ‘ no longer than 'till my man brings me some clean
 ‘ apparel, that I may rise with decency ;— in
 ‘ the mean time, sir, should take it as a favour
 ‘ that you would let me know how far I have been
 ‘ guilty of injustice to you in regard of Syrenia :
 ‘ — in your billet to me you mention an en-
 ‘ gagement ;

‘ gagement ;—if it be so I was perfectly ignorant of it, and at that time imagined I had strong reasons for disbelieving,—otherwise I do assure you, sir, not all my passion for that lady should have made me attempt to disunite your loves.’

Roffano. ‘ Though it may seem ungenerous to boast a lady’s favours, as I have no other way to justify my rash proceedings towards you, be pleased to read that letter :

In speaking this he presented to Leontine the letter he had received from Syrenia the day before, which that gentleman had no sooner looked over than he cried out with the greatest surprize,

Leontine. ‘ Good heaven !—Why this was dated but yesterday !’

Roffano. ‘ Yes, sir, and wrote on account of my testifying some jealousy on your being with her the evening before ;—but I have now done with that idle passion, and can now resign my claim with as much calmness as I would lately have maintained it with eagerness.’

Leontine. ‘ Is it possible you can be in earnest ?’

Roffano. ‘ Were Syrenia more beautiful than she is, the enjoyment of her person without her heart could give no happiness ; and had this paper, which accidentally fell from your pocket in the hurry this morning, happen’d sooner into my hands, I should not have proceeded as I have done.’

In speaking this he gave Leontine the paper he had taken up ;—the other immediately saw what it was, and receiving it with a smile made this reply :

Leontine. ‘ I thank you, sir ; but I assure you I am not at all vain of these verses, as they serve only to prove that the lady was willing to be

- ‘ double armed, and in case one lover should fail,
- ‘ to be provided with another.’

After this they began to enter into a very free discussion on the conduct of Syrenia towards them both ; and there now appeared so much deceit,---mean artifice,---ingratitude and perfidy, as well to the one as to the other, that it is hard to say which of them entertained the most despicable notions of her :---in fine, they agreed to resent the impositions she had practised on them in such a manner as some of my fair readers, how greatly soever they may condemn Syrenia, will not perhaps easily absolve them for.

The servant of Leontine being arrived with the things his master had ordered to be brought, that gentleman rose and got himself dressed, and Roffano in the mean time employed himself in gathering up all the letters he had received from Syrenia, and made them up in a large packet, and wrote on the cover,

- ‘ Amorous billets from a lady, of a very extra-
‘ ordinary character.’

They went in two chairs to the house where Syrenia lodged, and the door being opened, rushed up stairs without any ceremony, and even into the dining-room where she was sitting.---Leontine was the first that entered ; she rose to receive him ; but seeing his arm in a scarf, cried out,

‘ Syrenia. ‘ Oh, sir, what accident has befallen
‘ you ?’

‘ Leontine. ‘ No unlucky one, madam ; I have,
‘ indeed, received two slight wounds on your ac-
‘ count ; but I bless the hand that gave them, since
‘ they have been the means of curing one of a
‘ more dangerous nature in my heart.’

She had no time to ask what he meant by these words,---Roffano was now in the room, and
rejoined

rejoined to
ner :

Roffano

‘ conditio
‘ mistress
‘ have re
‘ madam
‘ you wi
‘ rate int
‘ we late
‘ dresses,
‘ you no

Leontine

‘ what n
‘ this pa
‘ may be
‘ the pic
Roffano
‘ from t
He th

Leontine
was all t
had four
compara
arts laid
with bo
not pow

Syrenia

‘ insulte
Roffano
‘ are y
‘ equal
‘ have
‘ that l
‘ umph
Leontine
‘ conc

rejoined to what the other had said in this manner :

Roffano. ' My heart is also in a pretty good condition too ; —— for though I have lost a mistress, I have gain'd a friend, from whom I have reason to hope more sincerity— You see, madam, two persons together, whom doubtless you wished to keep separate, while we had separate interests ; but we have now agreed, and as we lately joined to persecute you with our addresses, now join in the resolution of troubling you no more.'

Leontine. ' I have nothing to add, madam, to what my friend has delivered, but to restore this paper, which can be of no use to me, and may be of some to you, as change but the name, the picture may suit some happier man.'

Roffano. ' And I return those letters you have from time to time favoured me with.'

He then laid down the packet, at the same time Leontine did the verses, upon a table.— Syrenia was all this while immoveable as a statue, —— she had found from their first entrance that they had compared notes, —— that she was exposed, —— her arts laid open, and her hopes irrecoverably lost with both ; —— fain she would have spoke but had not power ; and all she could utter at last was,

Syrenia. ' Mighty well ; —— so then I am to be insulted.'

Roffano. ' No, madam, your birth and beauty are your protection ; and had your mind been equal to either, neither of us, I believe, would have broke his chain, or even wished to regain that liberty we now have so much cause to triumph in.'

Leontine. ' Come, sir, you see the lady is disconcerted, —— let us leave her to meditate on this

‘ adventure, it may be of service in some future one.’

Roffano. ‘ With all my heart.—A good husband to you, madam.’

Leontine. ‘ I join in the same wish.—Your servant, madam.’

They departed with these words, and I staid not long after them,—the sight of Syrenia’s despair, how justly soever she had brought it on herself, giving more pain than satisfaction.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Contains a brief detail of such occurrences as presented themselves to the Author’s observation in an evening’s Invisible ramble thro’ several parts of this metropolis.

IT has often been a matter of very great concern to me, and I believe must be the same to every thinking mind, to see how some people are continually hurried and busied about mere trifles of no manner of consequence to themselves, or scarce to any body else; while all the duties of religion,—all the regard for the welfare of their most particular friends,—all love of country, and even the dearest interests of their own families, are totally neglected.

What judgment can we form of a person of this cast, but that he has a vacuum in his head ready to be filled up with the first toy that presents itself, and not being endow’d with a strength of reason sufficient to direct his choice, suffers himself to be engrossed by such things as he finds make most noise

noise in the
to his own
tion.

Can a
man who
to sollici
whatsoe
a minist
are paid
the who
where h
ously re
the gre
tive of h
coat?

Anot
volved
best pa
Alley,—
enquire
of stock
purchase
out the
priated
out of

A
great
the pul
reconc
to disc
graph
ginary
sity
who

Ot
treme
cause
such

noise in the world, not such as have most relation to his own affairs, either as to fortune or reputation.

Can there be a sight more farcical than for a man who, without any petition to prefer or suit to sollicit; in fine, without any call or business whatsoever, is continually cringing at the levee of a minister of state, and when the compliments are paid and the circle is dismissed, runs through the whole round of his acquaintance, reporting where he has been and what he has seen, sagaciously remarking on every nod, wink, or smile of the great man, and finding mystery even in the tye of his wig, or the loose or strait buttoning his coat?

Another, whose affairs at home perhaps are involved in the utmost perplexities, shall pass the best part of his time among the jobbers in 'Change Alley,—go from coffee-house to coffee-house.—enquire of every broker he meets with the price of stocks, in which he has no share, or money to purchase any, and be more solicitous in finding out the uses to which the Sinking Fund is appropriated than for the means of extricating himself out of his present difficulties.

A third values himself much upon being a great connoisseur in politicks,—registers all the publick papers from year to year, pretends to reconcile all the contradictions they contain, and to discover some latent meaning in every paragraph, and takes more pains to unriddle their imaginary ænigmas than a poor servitor at the university does to translate Perseus for a rich student who pays, and fathers the labour of his brain.

Others have a taste for building,—are extremely curious in ornamenting the structures they cause to be erected with carvings, paintings, and such like superficial beauties; but never once examine

amine how the foundation is laid, or whether the pompous outworks may not be liable to sink very soon into a heap of rubbish.——Some employ their whole cares on the breeding and well managing their horses, hounds, and game-cocks, leaving the education of their sons entirely unregarded.

Impossible is it to enumerate the various trifles with which too many, even among the highest class of life, suffer themselves not only to be amused, but wholly taken up;—but I think, without any danger of being accused of too much severity, one may justly say with Shakespear of such men, that

‘ The earth has bubbles as the water hath,
‘ And these are some of them.’

In a word,---**MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING**, ---is a play so universally acted in this town, that one can go to very few places without being witness of some scenes of it.

As insignificant, however, as these people may seem by the description I have given of them, and as in effect they really are, they are yet of more consequence to the publick than is generally believed, or than they themselves, with all the stock of vanity they are usually possessed of, are capable of imagining; --- this, tho' it may be thought a paradox, will be easy for me to make appear,---as thus :

These unjudging creatures, for I have already proved them to be such, are frequently made the tools by which evil and designing men fashion out their ends:---when those in power have any thing on foot, from which they find it necessary to divert the attention of the nation, it is but throwing out some whisper, though of ever so

absurd

absurd and
I am spea
it in the e
cry, and
can alledg

It was
Oliver C
plish'd th
tion; an
yet more
far this si
about the
cious eve
and faith
detestati
torrent
events
will no
through

A late
ing, to
—in sp
he say
phetical

‘ Wh
‘ an
‘ Wh
‘ sh
‘ And

An
ligent
me, b
witho
have
pagat
ties,

absurd and ridiculous a nature, among the people I am speaking of, and they will immediately ring it in the ears of the populace 'till it becomes the cry, and every argument that truth and reason can alledge is deafen'd with the noise.

It was doubtless by this very means chiefly that Oliver Cromwell and his subtle agents accomplish'd the dreadful work of murder and usurpation ; and there have been some instances, of a yet more modern date, which have shewn how far this spirit of enthusiasm has been able to bring about the most astonishing as well as most pernicious events ; — events which all good men and faithful patriots have beheld with horror and detestation, though unable to repel the impetuous torrent of a blind, bigotted, and mistaken zeal : — events which we are willing to flatter ourselves will no more spread distraction and devastation through these kingdoms.

A late most excellent poet seems, notwithstanding, to have had some apprehensions of this kind ; — in speaking on the topic of national calamities he says very elegantly, though I hope not prophetically,

- Who knows but we may see again what once
‘ amaz’d we saw,
- When some black time may come when rage
‘ shall grapple law,
- And hush pale justice with dominion’s awe ?

An experience of many years, join'd with a diligent observation of the world, has convinced me, beyond all doubt, that these inconsiderates, without being sensible of the mischief they do, have been, and daily are, the instruments of propagating the most infamous scandals, gross falsities, and base aspersions on the great and good ;

as also the most ridiculous and idle stories, invented and calculated by men of more thinking heads, to amuse and divert the attention of the public from what most demands its regard.

A glaring instance of this latter kind now takes up the town,—all mouths are full of it,—all ears are open to it ;—but it appears to me that there are few eyes clear enough to discern the secret ground-work of this mountain of absurdities, and on what motive it was erected.

I think it not my province, however, nor shall presume to inform the judgment of any one in this point, but shall only relate a passage I happen'd to be witness of, which every one is at liberty to descant upon as he shall think proper.

Being one day on the other side of the Royal-Exchange, where some busines I had there being dispatch'd sooner than I expected, it came into my head to call in at a certain celebrated coffee-house, which I had been told was frequented by a great number of the most eminent and wealthy citizens ; but as I had no acquaintance with them, and some other more substantial reasons for not appearing in propria persona, I chose to go in my Invisible capacity.

Pursuant to this resolution I stepp'd into the first obscure alley I could find, and there girded on my precious Belt, which, as well as my Tablets, I seldom went out without taking with me, and then hasted to the place I mentioned.

I found the room very full of company, most of whom were of that sect of dissenters from the established church which are under the denomination of Presbyterians ;—I would not here be understood to mean any thing in ridicule of those gentlemen ; for I love and revere every man of real virtue and good sense, be he of what persuasion soever.

How

How
speak of
not pret
I shall,
writer,
not with

Three
were le
were en
tleman
spirit, t
of a ca
with a l
the bel

The
be a
strength
ner in
that w
postero
gaged
—afte
was th
utterly
those
him w
guish
by tha

Th
after
and h
a faith
testim
written

Fi
• rac
• of

How far the persons I have just now occasion to speak of answer to either of these characters I will not pretend to say,—let their own words testify,—I shall, according to the phrase of the inspired writer,—set a guard upon my mouth that I offend not with my lips.—But to proceed,

Three or four, who I afterwards perceived were leading men among the sanctified tribe, were engaged in a very warm dispute with a gentleman who endeavoured, with a great deal of spirit, to expose the gross absurdities and falsehood of a cause they took upon them to maintain, and with a kind of magisterial air attempted to enforce the belief of in others.

The odds appeared to me at first, I confess, to be a little ungenerous; but I was the more strengthen'd in this opinion when I heard the manner in which they delivered their arguments, and that were urged in favour of one of the most preposterous and ridiculous complaints that ever engaged the attention of any men of common sense:—after saying this, I think it is needless to add, it was the affair of Squires and Canning.—As I am utterly unacquainted with the names either of those who defended the cause of the latter, or of him who treated it with contempt, I shall distinguish the one by that of *Assertors*, and the other by that of *Opponent*.

The conversation which pass'd on both sides, after I had got a convenient place to post myself, and had spread my Tablets, I shall give the public a faithful transcript of, as taken from those unerring testimonies, and was as the reader will find underwritten.

First Assertor. ‘I am surprised, sir, you should
• rack your brain for arguments against the cause
• of helpless innocence and virtue in distress.’

Second

Second Assertor. ‘ ‘Tis barbarous, ‘tis cruel.—
 ‘ Where shall we find an object of compassion if
 ‘ Betty Canning is not one?—We know her, sir,
 ‘ —know her to be pure and unpolluted.’

Third Assertor. ‘ Ay,—She is of our congregation,—has always been a diligent frequenter of the meeting-house, and fervent in her devotions.’

Opponent. ‘ So because she is of your congregation,—it naturally follows she must be chaste and pious;—the lambs of your flock never go astray;—but I forbear to make any reflection on this score, and shall only say, I never shall give credit to a story so full of inconsistencies and improbabilities as this which has been forged by her and her accomplices.’

First Assertor. ‘ Sir, there is no reasoning against fact; she has sworn to the truth of it before a magistrate, and that magistrate has testified his belief of it.’

Opponent. ‘ Yes, —the story she told was romantic,—it suited his taste,—he thought it might be a proper subject to work up into a Farce or Puppet-shew, so was willing to promote the credibility of it.’

First Assertor. ‘ Mere spite and scandal.’

Opponent. Not at all; and I doubt not but the imposition will be fully laid open by another magistrate, superior in every degree to him who takes her part.’

First Assertor. ‘ Sir, it is prophane and impious in him, or you, or any man, to espouse the cause of a wicked old hag,—a vagabond,—a gipsey, such as Mary Squires; and a known instrument of libidinous pleasures, such as mother Wells.’

Second Assertor. ‘ Oh ‘tis an abomination to all good men, and every word in favour of those vile wretches smells rankly of the breath of the old serpent.’

Opponent

Opponent
 ledge in
 however
 due to
 innocent
First A
Oppone
 to be so
 few que
 inconsis
 Betty C
Second
 how to
Oppone
 been ro
 ruffians
 live up
 all the
 of othe
 her int
 house,
 not acc
 her ch
First A
 probabl
 to brin
 with to
 to her
 vile fel
Oppone
 chose a
 would
 let tha
 would
 in prac
 toward
 fashion
 she no

Opponent. ‘ Gentlemen, I have nothing to allege in defence of these creatures ; but that however guilty they may have been, or continue to be, in other respects, they are entirely innocent in this they are now accused of.’

First Affortor. ‘ No, no,—’tis impossible.’

Opponent. ‘ Saying a thing does not prove it to be so ;—but give me leave only to offer a few queries, in relation to some of the many inconsistencies in the tale told by that idle wench, Betty Canning.’

Second Affortor. ‘ Do so,—we shall know how to answer them.’

Opponent. ‘ First then,—supposing her to have been robb’d in the manner she pretends by two ruffians,—what could induce fellows who live upon the spoil, after having taken from her all they found worth taking, to quit the pursuit of other booty and lose their time in dragging her into the country, only to throw her into the house, and then leave her there ; for she does not accuse them of making any attempt upon her chastity.’

First Affortor. ‘ As to that,—it is highly probable they might be fee’d by mother Wells to bring the first young woman they could meet with to her house, in order to be made a sacrifice to her mercenary views, and the lust of some vile fellow.’

Opponent. ‘ Then they would certainly have chose an object of a more tempting aspect, or would have deserved little for their pains ;—but let that pass.—If it were as you imagine,—would any woman, who it is said has long been in practice in the seducing trade, have behaved towards the prey brought into her clutches in the fashion she did to Betty Canning ?—Would she not rather have sooth’d the frightened maid,—

‘ reviv’d her drooping spirits with good eating and drinking,—promis’d her fine cloaths, and then introduced some man to her, who might have allured her to the sin she aim’d to make her guilty of?—Surely the way to tempt her to be a prostitute was not to lock her up alone in a wild desolate room, without a bed to lie upon, or any other refreshment than a little bread and water;—such usage, one must think, was intended to mortify, not excite a carnal inclination.’

First Affortor. ‘ Sir, I am grieved,—greatly grieved in spirit, to find you so ignorant of the force of virtue;—I tell you, sir, that the courage and resolution of this pious virgin struck such an awe into the minds of those profligate wretches she was placed among, that they had not the power of putting their wicked designs in execution;—Heaven, indeed, for a trial of her patience, permitted them to distress her helpless innocence, but not to destroy it.’

Opponent. ‘ Very extraordinary, truly.—But pray, sir, why did this suffering saint remain so long under the roof of such abandon’d creatures, since all accounts agree that in three days, nay in three hours after her confinement, she had the same opportunity of making her escape as at the time she pretends to affect it?’

Second Affortor. ‘ Her Eyes were not open to the means of her deliverance ’till that blessed moment;—it was ordained she should undergo the persecution she did, in order to make her virtue more triumphant over sin and shame.’

Opponent. ‘ Oh, gentlemen,—these arguments will never be swallow’d any where but in a conventicle.’

Third Affortor. ‘ Sir, They will always have their due weight with every one but a reprobate.’

Opponent.

Opponent. ‘ How, sir ! ’

The Opponent was so much incens’d at these words, that he started from his seat, and was about to reply with his fist, but some of the more moderate part of the company interposed, and prevented the mischief that might otherwise have ensued :—by their persuasions he sat down again, and the dispute would doubtless have been renew’d, it may be with greater vehemence than before, if a drawer from a neighbouring tavern had not luckily come and told him that two gentlemen, whose names he mentioned, desired to speak with him ; on which he went away, perhaps to the great satisfaction of the assertors of Betty Canning’s cause, who, if he had staid and continued his queries, might probably have been a little puzzled to find answers to them.

During the debate I have been repeating every one in the room kept a profound silence ; but afterwards the conversation became general,—several other subjects were started by particular persons, but they were not listen’d to,—the majority seem’d to have their heads so full of Betty Canning that they could scarce think or speak of any thing beside :—’tis true, indeed, they did not all give credit to her story, yet the positiveness with which they heard it affirm’d made the least credulous divided in their thoughts, and afraid to pass a judgment either on the one or the other side of the question.

The reader will doubtless naturally suppose that it was impossible for me to live in the world, and have any acquaintance in it, without having heard, long before I came to this place, much talk of Elizabeth Canning,—her pitiful distress,—her miraculous preservation and escape, and all the other prodigies of that amazing story.

’Tis

"Tis true, indeed, I was a stranger to no part of it ;—but then my conversation being chiefly among the gay part of the town, I was not much surprised that people who can find very little to employ their thoughts should be fond of a tale which had so much of the marvelous in it ;—as children, before they arrive at years capable of being instructed in more solid matters, listen with pleasure to their nurses stories of giants, —fairies, and enchanted castles,—as such I regarded all they said, and thought no further of it.

But when I heard grave citizens,—men of business,—of a sedate deportment and good understanding in other things, argue with serious countenances on such a heap of wild absurdities, I cannot say whether my astonishment or indignation had most dominion over my faculties ; but this I know, that both together destroy'd all the little stock of patience I am master of, and would not suffer me to stay any longer to listen to those insignificant debates which I found were likely to continue among this company.

C H A P. II.

Relates some farther incidents of a pretty particular nature, which fell under the Author's observation in the same evening's Invisible progression.

THOSE turbulent emotions which the scene I had just come from being witness of had rais'd in me, being somewhat quieted by air and walking, I had the curiosity to call in at another great coffee-house, hoping I should find there something to give a turn to the present disposition of my mind.

But

But I f
were not
ed.—H
—cler
physician
composed
engag'd
one of ou
of Betty
resounded
room, a
these cre
every tal
Here
my Tab
of being
to the p
the smal
compan
courses

Accou
there a
the nex
liged m
the hub

The
—it wa
little sig
blood w
clothes
places
scarce
of mer
halloo
him,—
reward

I w
thoug

But I found that the remains of my ill-humour were not to be so soon dissipated as I had imagined.—Here was indeed a vast deal of company,—clerks in publick offices,—lawyers,—physicians,—tradesmen, and some few divines, composed the promiscuous assembly ; but all were engag'd on the same dirty draggle-tail subject, as one of our news-writers justly terms it, the names of Betty Canning, the Gipsey, and mother Wells, resounded from each quarter of the crowded room, and the cause then depending between these creatures made the whole conversation at every table.

Here I would not be at the trouble of opening my Tablets, easily perceiving that nothing worthy of being recorded in them, or of communicating to the publick was likely to ensue ; and also that the smallest part of time I should waste in this company would be paying too dear for any discourses I should hear from them.

Accordingly I left the house after having staid there about seven minutes ; but had not reach'd the next street before a confused noise behind oblig'd me to stand up in the porch of a door 'till the hubbub was pass'd by.

The occasion of this uproar presently appear'd ; —it was a poor fellow carried on a bier, with very little signs of life in him,—his face covered with blood which issued from his nose and mouth,—his clothes torn that the naked flesh appear'd in many places ; but so deform'd with bruises that it could scarce be known for what it was ;—a mix'd rabble of men, women and children follow'd, shouting, hallooing, and crying,—it was good enough for him,—and that they were glad he had got his reward.

I was startled at so much inhumanity, for I thought nothing could excuse such cruel treatment, though

though I doubted not but the fellow had been guilty of some atrocious crime;—but I was soon undeceived in this point, and let into the whole affair.

A tradesman who happen'd to be standing at his shop door, just opposite to the place where I had taken shelter, stepp'd forward and ask'd what was the matter,—and by what accident the poor man on the bier was reduced to that condition he saw him in;—on this several of the mob gather'd about him, and answer'd his interrogatories in these terms:

First Mob. ‘ Ah, sir, he is as arrant a rogue as ever you heard on in your life.’

Second Mob. ‘ Aye, 'twere no matter if he had been kill'd outright.’

Third Mob. ‘ No, no, 'tis much better as it is, —I hope to make a holiday to see him hang'd.’

Shopkeeper. ‘ But what has he done?’

Fourth Mob. ‘ Done, sir, you will bless yourself to hear it;—he said that poor Betty Canning was a perjur'd slut;—that all she had sworn to was lies; and that she deserv'd to be whipp'd at the cart's tail, or pillor'd, or transported to the plantations;—and a great deal more.’

First Mob. ‘ Nay, he was beginning to say worse things of her than all this, if his mouth had not been stopp'd.’

Shopkeeper. ‘ Then I suppose he has been fighting.’

Second Mob. ‘ No hang him, — I don't believe he has courage enough to fight; but he would have run his game on Betty Canning 'till now, for any thing I know, if a brewer's servant and an honest slaughter-man in Fore-street, and three or four neighbours of ours in Norton-Falgate, had not all at once fallen upon him and beat the words down his throat.’

Shop-

Shopkeeper
at foot
Tbird
with suc
ning;
pull'd d
Fourth
not for

The t
into his sl
ken of an
their com
insulting
who was
their abu

This f
reasonable
ly been a
have had
adventur
had no c
Invisibili
proceed i

I had
ticular c
from any
it too sp
to another
meeting
riosity to

Any c
that the
in the vi
had been
going in
nion my
however

Shopkeeper. " But was not so many to one odds
at football ? "

Third Mob. " There is no minding fair play
with such a rascal ; — abuse poor Betty Can-
ning ; — why he deserves to have his house
pull'd down about his ears. "

Fourth Mob. " Aye, and so it should, if it were
not for his wife and five small children. "

The tradesman said no more, but turn'd back
into his shop, lifting up his hands and eyes in to-
ken of amazement, and the rabble ran to rejoin
their companions, who I could hear still continued
insulting and villifying the poor maim'd wretch,
who was altogether unable to return any part of
their abuse.

This shopkeeper appeared to me to be a more
reasonable creature than most of those I had late-
ly been among ; and I should have been glad to
have had some discourse with him concerning this
adventure ; — but that being impracticable, as I
had no opportunity at present of shaking off my
Invisibility, I was obliged to content my self and
proceed in my progression.

I had now no design in my head, — no par-
ticular course to steer ; but as I was entirely free
from any engagement that evening, and thought
it too soon to go home, I rambled from one street
to another for a considerable time, yet without
meeting any one thing sufficient to tempt my cu-
riosity to make a farther enquiry into.

Any observing reader may reasonably imagine,
that the little satisfaction I had been able to reap
in the visits I had made at the two coffee-houses I
had been already in, would have hinder'd me from
going into another, and indeed I was of that op-
inion myself ; — I soon found I was mistaken
however, — and so will he ; — I really
ventured

ventured into a third ; but the motive which excited me to do so was this :

As I was passing by I perceived thro' the windows, for then the candles within were lighted up, several gentlemen with news-papers before them, on which they seem'd to be discoursing with each other with a great deal of seriousness and gravity :—as I have naturally an extreme passion for knowing the affairs of the world, those of Europe especially, I thought it highly eligible in me to hear what was said upon them by persons who had the appearance of some understanding in them.

At the first table I came to were six or seven gentlemen, most of whom were some way or other concern'd in the British Herring-fishery ; but though they talk'd very learnedly on the subject, it suited not my taste, so staid not long with them, but adjourn'd to the next company.

These were merchants, who I found were greatly disconcerted at an article they had been just reading in relation to the strict engagements the French had entered into with the Indians, and the daily incursions those miscall'd friends and allies made on the English colonies ;—but as I cannot pretend to any skill in commerce, I did not spread my tablets to receive the impression of their discourse ; so can only say in general, that they made very heavy complaints, and cry'd out, that if speedy care were not taken to put a stop to those proceedings, trade must be ruin'd, and our settlements in that part of the world utterly destroy'd.

The third table was fill'd with persons who seem'd to be of no avocation, nor at all interested in any branch of busines or publick affairs ; but talk'd of every thing they had been reading merely as things which afforded matter for conversation.

—On my joining them, the magnanimity of the

the Prus
extoll'd h
his clem
rit where
agreed th
a blessing
tern to h

The
great an
that regi
gracious
me at th
tinued sp
not been
more or
ing mo
with mo

I obse
one corr
others,
earnest i
affair ;—
nificant
of their
profound
extraord

Their
they spo
sible to
ther ;—
when o
which
the im
distance
soft whi

On
little im
they ex

VOL

the Prussian monarch was the topic ; — they extoll'd his wisdom, his bravery, his temperance, his clemency, the encouragement he gave to merit wherever he found it, and all unanimously agreed that he was the father of his people, — a blessing to the land he govern'd, — and a pattern to his fellow rulers of the earth.

The just admiration I ever had of this truly great and most amiable prince, — exclusive of that regard due to him as so near a relation to our gracious sovereign, would certainly have kept me at that table as long as the company had continued speaking on so agreeable a subject, if I had not been hurried from it by a propensity, I believe, more or less natural to all mankind, that of being most eager to explore what is hid from us with most care.

I observed at a little table, which was placed at one corner of the room, a good distance from the others, two elderly persons, who seem'd very earnest in discourse on some important and secret affair ; — by the winks, the nods, and other significant gestures which accompanied the motion of their lips, I doubted not but that they were profound politicians, and were discussing some extraordinary transaction of the cabinet.

Their heads were pretty close together, and they spoke in so low a voice as to render it impossible to be heard by any one except by each other ; — but this precaution had no efficacy when once my wonderful Tablets were displayed, which had this excellent property of receiving the impression of whatever was said within the distance of nine yards, though uttered in the most soft whisper.

On my drawing near to them they seemed a little impatient for the coming of a person who they expected, and who presently after appeared ;

—as soon as he had seated himself, the following dialogue ensued :

First Man. ‘ Oh, mr. Slycraft, I am glad you are come ;—we were beginning to think you long.’

Slycraft. I am somewhat beyond my hour, indeed ; but I assure you nothing could have made me so but the good of the cause.’

Second Man. ‘ Your zeal and diligence are not to be doubted ;—but let us hear what success have your endeavours met with.’

Slycraft. ‘ Truly not so much as I hoped ;—I do not think there is a more difficult thing in the world than getting people to subscribe ;—I have been half the town over and have been able to procure no more than three.’

First Man. ‘ Then I hope they are fat ones.’

Slycraft. ‘ Pretty well, as times go ;—Credulous Woodcock, Esq; has set his name for twenty guineas.’

First Man. ‘ Very handsome ;—five or six hundred such as he would do the business.’

Slycraft. ‘ Aye, but where shall we find them ?’

Second Man. ‘ Well, but who are the others ?’

Slycraft. ‘ Why there is mr. Nathaniel Vain-good,—twelve guineas.’

First Man. ‘ We must take the will for the deed ;—he has not above sixty or seventy pounds a year to live upon.’

Slycraft. ‘ Then there is mr. Simon Goofly, the haberdasher,—ten guineas, but has promised to prevail on some friends of his to set their names very generously.’

Second Man. ‘ I dare say he will do all he can.—But have you seen mrs. Waver ?’

Slycraft. ‘ Yes, but she still desires a little more time to consider ;—says, she will en-

quire

• quire f
• friends
• was an
• subscri
• leis tha
• *First*
• of her
• Cantw
• labour
• stion.’
• *Second*
• tunity
• *Slycra*
• when
• find hi
• honour
• pel ec
• *First*
• be set
• this b
• against
• stine M
• will l
• you k
• those
• ally t
• kept u
• we ha
• *Second*
• now g
• ty ; a
• tation
• *Slycra*
• you k
• their
• can he
• what

quire farther into the affair, and hear what her friends think of it ; and all I could get from her was an assurance, that if she found it proper to subscribe at all, she would not set her name for less than an hundred pieces.'

First Man. ' Then we may be pretty certain of her ; for I know she will be directed by Mr. Cantwell, the Nonconformist preacher, who labours all he can to promote the cause in question.'

Second Man. ' Have you yet found an opportunity of talking with the Orator ?'

Slycraft. ' I was with him above an hour, and when I had once convinced him that he should find his account in it, he gave me his word and honour that he would rant and roar 'till his chapel echoes in favour of the party.'

First Man. ' That is well ; —all engines must be set to work, or the town will grow cool on this business, and begin to renew their clamour against Naturalization of the Jews and Clandestine Marriage bills ; —the spirit of the people will have vent on something or another, and you know it behoves us to keep them silent on those scores, —nothing ever did it more effectually than this we are upon ; — but it must be kept up for a time : —I could wish, methinks, we had the Westleys on our side.'

Second Man. ' 'Tis a vain attempt, —they are now grown too rich to accept of a small gratuity ; and I much question whether their exhortations would answer the expence.'

Slycraft. ' I am of your opinion : —besides, you know there is a person who can influence their congregations as much as any thing they can hear from the pulpit. —— But I will tell you what I have done to day, —— I have engaged a

‘clergyman of the established church to write a pamphlet in behalf of the cause we have in hand.’

First Man. ‘A clergyman of the established church employ his pen in behalf of such a cause!—Prithee, Slycraft, how didst thou work upon him?—it must certainly be by some very extraordinary method.’

Slycraft. ‘The promise of a small present at first wrought upon his necessities; — but on my telling him who and who were concerned in this business, and the motives which induced them to be so, the hopes of having the pitiful Curacy he now enjoys exchanged for a good fat living, made him wholly ours.’

First Man. ‘Admirable!’

Second Man. ‘But may we depend upon his secrecy?’

Slycraft. ‘Never doubt that, as his own interest is concerned.’

First Man. ‘Hitherto things go pretty swimmingly on our side.—But let me see the subscription book; —I have received five guineas to day from mr. Obadiah Prim, and must insert his name.’

‘Till now I was at the greatest loss, as ’tis probable the reader will also be, to know what all this meant, or in whose favour, or on what account the subscription they talk’d of was rais’d; but on mr. Slycraft’s delivering the book to his friend, I look’d over the shoulder of the latter as he opened it, and saw in the first leaf, by way of title page, these words wrote in a very fair hand:

A LIST

A LIST of those worthy Persons

W H O

Have subscribed to the relief

O F

E L I Z A B E T H C A N N I N G.

The names underwritten in this legend were too numerous to be inserted,—I shall therefore only say, that the sum of what was rais'd by their subscription amounted to little less than a thousand pounds;—Monstrous abuse of charity!—Preposterous benevolence! which will hereafter reflect more shame than honour on the bestowers.

My astonishment was greater than I can express; but I had not then time to indulge it.—The book being returned to mr. Slycraft, he addressed his companions in these terms:

Slycraft. ‘ You know, gentlemen, that tho’ it is highly necessary a sum of money should be raised for this girl, to prevent her squeaking, as Virtue Hall has done, yet the intent of those who set us to work was not to make her fortune, but by the strangeness of the story she tells to amuse the populace, and divert their attention from those things which they ought not to be too well acquainted with.’

First Man. ‘ Very true; and I think it answers the end.’

Second Man. ‘ Aye, and much better than could be expected.’

Slycraft. ‘ It has indeed; but I have been thinking of ways and means to make it do so yet more;—suppose we advertise this sub-

scription in the public papers; — I have drawn up something for that purpose, which I should be glad to have your approbation of ?”

First Man. “ By all means; — pray let us see it.”

Mr. Slycraft then took a small piece of paper out of his pocket and read these lines :

Slycraft. “ Whereas many well-disposed and compassionate persons, in regard to the severe distresses, cruel usage, wonderful preservation, and miraculous escape of that chaste maid Elizabeth Canning, are inclined to contribute towards her future relief, all such are desired to send what sums they shall think fit to bestow to the following places : ”

Slycraft. “ We shall easily find shops and coffee-houses where the money may be received, if any shall be sent, as doubtless there will be several persons who we have not an opportunity to address. — But that is the least part of the business; — these advertisements will reach the country, — the people there will be curious to know the story, which they shall be informed of, by ballads and penny books sent down to them. — What do you think of it ? ”

First Man. “ As of the most excellent strata-gem I ever heard of in my life.”

Second Man. “ It is certainly a lucky thought; — the innocent country people will be quite alarmed, — the young men will talk of nothing but Betty Canning to their sweethearts, and the old men think only to preserve their daughters from the danger she escaped; — all remembrance of what has been done by their superiors will be buried in oblivion, and elections may go how they will.”

Slycraft.

Slycraft. ‘ I wrote the advertisement in a hurry,—just as the thought started into my head.— I am sensible it will admit of some emendations.—Suppose we adjourn to a tavern, where we may consult farther upon it with more privacy than here ?

First Man. ‘ With all my heart.’

Second Man. ‘ And mine, as all our expences on this occasion are sure to be reimbursed.’

These brethren in iniquity went out of the coffee-house as the last repeated words were spoken, and I had not the least inclination to follow them, nor to hear what farther contrivances would be formed to impose on the credulous, infatuated, deluded multitude :— indeed I was so thunderstruck at what I had already been witness of, that I could scarce forbear bursting into exclamations, which if uttered by an unseen mouth must needs have been very astonishing and terrifying to all who had heard them ;— I therefore prudently withdrew, designing to attempt no future discoveries that night.

The mean artifices which I found some men, miscalled the great, make no scruple of putting in practice to gain their ends, filled me with an equal share of indignation and contempt ; but when I reflected how I had just now seen charity, the noblest of all virtues, perverted and prostituted to reward infamy and vileness, it struck me with a horror which forced from me these or the like words :

‘ Good God ! said I to myself, in an age when numberless, nameless miseries abound,— when all our prisons labour with the weight of wretches confined within their walls, many for small debts which their necessities obliged them to contract, and some by unjust and malicious prosecutions,—while every parish, nay almost

every street, affords objects of real distress,— while the remains of the most antient and honourable families are reduced by the fatal South-Sea scheme, and other more latent public calamities, to the extreamest want, shall all these, or any of these, send unavailing petitions to those from whom they might expect redress, while a girl sprung from the lowest dregs of the people, bred up to toil, a drudge, one of the very meanest class of servants, receive donations which she as little knows how to make a proper use of as to deserve! — a girl, who if she had really suffered all she pretends to have done, would indeed have had a claim to justice against those who had wronged her, but none to the bounties so lavishly bestowed upon her.'

These kind of meditations would doubtless have accompanied me to my own door, if they had not been interrupted, as well as my course towards home, by an unexpected accident, which the reader will find faithfully related in the succeeding chapter.

C H A P. III.

Though it appears to be no more than a continuation of the same evening's ramble, yet it presents the reader with an adventure of much more importance to the public than any contained in the two last foregoing chapters.

THE human heart is liable to many bad propensities, which if not timely corrected by reason shoot forth into practice and become vices; — but of these there are two sorts, — the one born with us, and part of our nature; — the other imbibed by the fatal prevalence of example,

ample, a
cond nat

Those
attended
fence th
senses :—
constituti
ty ;—th
on every
low-cre
in count
thing th
epicure
emptyin
the deli

But
sweare
on ; - t
part,--
them,
faction
imagin
the fak
to think
—a few
a mode
indiscru
English

The
after I
the re
of my
thought
more p
a wor
procee
gave r

ample, and rooted in us by custom, which is a second nature.

Those born with us, as the indulging them is attended with some pleasure, urge in their defence the unconquerable desire of gratifying the senses:—the lustful man pleads the warmth of his constitution, and the strong allurements of beauty;—the soul of the ambitious triumphs and exults on every degree of power he gains over his fellow-creatures;—the miser thinks himself happy in counting over his bags, and being master of a thing that will purchase all things else;—and the epicure feels no care, no sorrow, while he is emptying the full-charged goblet, and palliating the delicious viand.

But what has the blasphemer, — the profane swearer, or the gamester to alledge in his vindication;—these are crimes in which nature has no part,---nor are the senses any way concerned in them, as they neither excite nor feel any satisfaction in them;—one might therefore be apt to imagine, that men thus guilty sinned merely for the sake of sinning;—but I will not allow myself to think that there are many so impudently daring, —a few distinguished persons will serve to bring up a mode,---and every one knows that at present an indiscriminate imitation is the reigning folly of the English nation.

These were reflections which occur'd to me after I came home, as I was about to transcribe the remaining part of my evening's progress out of my precious Tablets:—I had some farther thoughts on the occasion, but as they might seem more proper for the pulpit than to be inserted in a work of this nature, I shall add no more, but proceed to the narrative of that adventure which gave rise to them.

As I was passing in my way home, through a street of no very good repute, two persons from a little narrow alley bolted hastily upon me, to the no small danger of my Invisibilityship, if an agility not very common with me had not that instant enabled me to give a sudden spring, by which I voided the rush I must otherwise have received.

They went on before me ;--the night was extremely dark,--neither moon nor stars to assist the visual ray ; but by the help of some candles burning in a shop not yet shut up, I distinguished that the one was very richly dressed, and had much the appearance of a man of fashion ; and that the other was a fellow I had often seen on many occasions, and whose character I was perfectly acquainted with.

Scarce is there a greater villain to be found in low-life ;--I say in low-life, because should any persons in authority, or dignified with titles, which heaven forbid, ever appear in this nation, to deserve such black denominations, their crimes would, like their ranks, be distinguished, and superior to those which the rest of mankind have the power to put in practice, and though placed in an orb too high to be reached by the just vengeance of their oppressed fellow-creatures, would doubtless incur what Mr. Addison makes Cato prophetically say in relation to Julius Cæsar, on his endeavouring to subvert the old Roman constitution, and become absolute and perpetual Dictator :

‘ Sure there are bolts in the right hand of Jove,
‘ Red with uncommon wrath to blast the Man
‘ Who owes his greatness to his country’s ruin.’

But

But to return to my little knave.——The wretch is now called mr. Makeplea,——he was formerly servant to a lawyer whom I employed in several affairs I had the misfortune to be engaged in;——living with that gentleman a considerable time he picked up some scraps of law,——and all the terms and phrases of that abstruse science by rote,——knew how to take out a writ, set an officer to work, fill up a bail-bond, and procure evidences in a dubious cause.——With this fund he had the impudence, after his master's death, to pretend he had been his clerk, got himself entered as an attorney, and has ever since practis'd as such.

His sole business, however, as may be easily supposed, has always been among the very meanest sort of people, fomenting litigious quarrels, and then making them up, after having drained the purses on both sides:——tallymen and usurers, either to get in their weekly payments or to justify their extortions, and harlots to revenge themselves by law on those who called their honesty in question, were the chief of his clients,——and the best of those with whom he is accustomed to converse, the greatest part of his acquaintance being bailiffs and their followers.

I could not therefore avoid being very much amaz'd on seeing him in the company I now did; but my wonder soon ceas'd on hearing, as I was close at their heels, the following discourse between them:

Makeplea. ‘ It is very lucky, mr. Coaxum, that
‘ I happened to be at home when you came;—
‘ there are some of the profession who would
‘ have scrupled to undertake this business;—
‘ but for my part, I am always ready to venture
‘ every thing to serve my friends.’

Coaxum.

Coaxum. ' My dear Makeplea, you never lost any thing, nor ever shall, by our fraternity ;— I know there are some who will sneak their heads out of the collar and leave their lawyer in the lurch.'

Makeplea. ' Aye faith, I narrowly escaped the pillory once ;—a vile dog, who, after I had procured him three evidences, pretended a panic in his conscience, threw up his cause, and suffered himself to be nonsuited.'

Coaxum. ' You know we scorn such doings ;— and I can tell you this will be a pretty good job to you ;—we drained the fool's pocket of above an hundred pieces before we plaid upon credit, so that there is enough in bank to make you a handsome present for your trouble.'

Makeplea. ' Well, but concerning this reversion, — I hope he has lost enough to give an air of justice ;—that is, a *quantum sufficit* for the making over his estate after the decease of his father ?'

Coaxum. ' Upwards of a thousand pounds, — besides a gold watch and a fine diamond ring, which he seems to set a high value upon, — the two last Count Cogdy has agreed to sell him again at a great price ;—so that altogether the sum will amount to a sufficient purchase of the reversion of an estate of four hundred a year, — especially as the present possessor is not above fifty years of age, and may live a long time.—Besides, we hear the young fellow is going to be married to a woman of fortune, — so that the deeds may be made redeemable ;— we do not regard his dirty arces, — the ready rhino is what we want, and he may pay the money out of his wife's fortune, and be clear of us again.'

Makeplea.

Makeplea. ‘ Oh, then it will be a mortgage rather than a sale.—Who are with him ?’

Coaxum. ‘ Only Count Cogdy, Jack Hazard, and Tom Wheadle.’

Makeplea. ‘ They cannot be witnesses, as I suppose they are parties concerned.’

Coaxum. ‘ We are equal sharers in the booty ; but the money was lost wholly to the Count.— However, there will be no want of witnesses,— the landlord of the house and his son will set their hands.’

These words brought them to a door, which being opened at the first knock, by one of the most ill-look’d fellows that ever disgraced human nature, they went through a long dark narrow passage into a back parlour, where I accompanied them, and was witness of a scene somewhat like what I remember to have seen some years ago in a play of mrs. Centlivre’s, called the Gamester.— Count Cogdy, as he was called, sat leaning his arm upon a table in a careless posture ; — Jack Hazard was walking backwards and forwards in the room humming an old tune ; — a gentleman, whose name I had not yet heard, had thrown himself across two chairs with all the tokens of despair about him ; — Tom Wheadle stood near him, as we came in was endeavouring to give him some consolation, in these terms :

Tom Wheadle. ‘ Prithee, dear Clerimont, do not be thus disconcerted,—I have lost as much as you twenty times over, and have as often recovered it again,—these things will happen to gentlemen that play ; — fortune, indeed, has been against you to-night, but may not always be so, —one lucky hit at another time may bring all back,’

Clerimont

Clerimont made no answer, nor seemed to regard what he said, 'till hearing the name of Makeplea, and Count Cogdy beginning to instruct him in the business he was to do, that unfortunate gentleman started up at once from the posture he had been in, and staring somewhat wildly in the face of Makeplea, cryed to him,

Clerimont. ' Are you the fiend who is to convey my soul, that is, my estate, into the regions of eternal darkness, whence it can never, ---never more return !'

Makeplea. ' What do you mean, sir !'

Count Cogdy. ' The gentleman is only a little out of humour.---Faith, mr. Clerimont, you do not do well to behave in this fashion ;---you have lost some money, indeed, ---but you have lost it fairly ; ---I never take an advantage of any man, and shall be ready to give you your revenge at any time.'

Jack Hazard. ' Aye, I will say that for the Count, that he scorns a mean thing.'

Count Cogdy. ' I believe there is not a more unlucky fellow at play in the world than myself though I have happened to win to night ;---yet, as I said before, I am ready to give mr. Clerimont an opportunity of retrieving all he has lost whenever he pleases :---for my part, I would stake all I am worth against a pair of shoe-buckles, rather than any gentleman should think I impos'd upon him.'

Coaxum. ' No, no,—you are above any such thing.'

Jack Hazard. ' We all know that.'

Makeplea. ' Come, come, gentlemen,---this is doing nothing,---all loss of time, and every moment of mine is precious ;---there are two noblemen

‘ noble
‘ vern ;
‘ know
‘ are to
‘ Count
‘ but fi
‘ Here,
‘ the v
‘ other
‘ Cleri
other
Count
ftance
the end
whether
plied,
Cleri

The
mont
and se
bling h
heart b
the Co
Cler

‘ that
‘ part
Cou
‘ and
‘ frien
Jac
‘ too ;
‘ your
‘ vent
Cler
‘ your
‘ you,

‘ noblemen now waiting for me at the Garter tavern ;—pray proceed to the business ; —let me know how the deeds I have brought with me are to be filled up.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ I will tell you immediately ;—but first I must do justice to this gentleman.—Here, sir, are the watch and ring you stak’d, the value of which, you know, is added to the other sums.’

Clerimont put the one in his pocket and the other on his finger with a deep sigh, and the Count went on repeating to Makeplea the substance of what he was to write : ---the latter, at the end of every article, demanded of Clerimont whether he agreed to it ;---to which he fullenly replied,

Clerimont. ‘ I do ;---I see no other remedy.’

The lawyer having dispatched his part, Clerimont was desired to execute,—that is, to sign and seal ; ---he did both, but with such a trembling hand and visible distraction of mind that my heart bled for him.---In delivering the writings to the Count he said,

Clerimont. ‘ There, sir,—I suppose this is all that is required of me,—and I may now de- part ?’

Count Cogdy. ‘ No, no,—we must have a bottle and a bird together, to shew we are still good friends.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ Aye, and each of us a wench too ;---I know where there is a covey of as young, pretty, plump patridges as any in Covent-Garden.’

Clerimont. ‘ Rot your bottle and your bird and your wenches ; —I have done with them, and you, and the whole world for ever.’

In

In speaking these words he snatched up his sword and hat and was about to go out of the room ; but they all laid hold of him, crying at the same time,

Count Cogdy. ‘ Nay, Clerimont, you must not leave us in this humour ;---upon my soul no man wishes you better than myself.’

Tom Wheadle. ‘ We are all your friends,--- your very good friends.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ Dear Clerimont, be persuad-
‘ ed.’

Coaxum. ‘ Faith we must not lose you so.’

He made not the least answer to all this, nor seemed in the least affected with their pretended kindness ; but broke from them and ran directly out of the house.—As for me, I had as little inclination as himself to stay in the company of such blood-suckers ; indeed, having never seen him before I was curious to know somewhat more of him, and also how he would behave when alone, and at liberty to ruminate on the misfortune he had plunged himself into,—so followed his steps with all the speed I could.

It was not very difficult to keep pace with him ; for tho’ he gained ground of me at first, he soon halted and gave me an opportunity of coming up with him.—Never did man traverse the streets with more disordered motions,---crossing the way an hundred times, I believe, within the space of half a quarter of a mile, without having the least occasion to do so :—sometimes he would run as if in pursuit of somebody, and sometimes stand quite still and motionless as a statue ; and it was well that the darkness of the night befriended him, otherwise whoever had met him would doubtless have taken him to be mad.

In

In the
turned
water fi
a door,
a sudden
head, l
mittanc
street,
looks th
the mo
—th

Cleri
‘ this f
‘ from
‘ som
‘ and
‘ worl

I fea
should
words
him as
feet of
ing wh
that if
Clerim
fate b
have in
terposi
ported

But
occasi
burthe
from t

Cler
‘ som
‘ che
‘ too,
‘ wha

In this fashion he went part of the Strand, and turned down one of those streets leading to the water side ;—he stopped about the middle of it at a door, and had his hand upon the knocker, but a sudden thought coming that instant into his head, he left it without making the signal for admittance, and walked slowly to the end of the street, where leaning on a little wall that overlooks the river, he remained for some minutes in the most thoughtful and contemplative attitude ;—then said to himself,

Clerimont. ‘ How profound ! — how solemn is this silent scene ! — inviting to a certain rest from misery and shame ! — Here, within the bosom of this friendly element, may all my follies and misfortunes be hid for ever from the talking world ! ’

I feared nothing less would ensue, than that I should see him presently attempt to do as his words had hinted ;— I therefore drew as near to him as I could, in order to prevent so sad an effect of his despair.— Here I cannot help remarking what I have often reflected upon since ;— that if the thing had happened as I expected, and Clerimont had found himself snatched from his fate by an Invisible hand, he would doubtless have imagined his preservation owing to the interposition of some Supernatural Being, and reported it as a miracle.

But how he would have acted on such an odd occasion is uncertain ; for after a pause, and disburthening himself of some few sighs, he started from the posture he had been in, and cry’d,

Clerimont. ‘ No,—it must not be ; — I have some business still for life,—revenge on the curst cheat, the villain that has undone me.—Love too, demands something from me ;— but by what means I shall repay that mighty debt I know

‘ know not.—Oh Charlotte!—Charlotte!—on
‘ how lost a wretch hast thou bestowed thy
‘ heart! ’

These words were uttered with a groan which seemed to cleave his breast, and were the last I heard from him at that time:—he turned back, and went hastily to the house where he had first stopped, the door was opened on his knocking, and too suddenly shut again for me to have entered with him if I had intended to do so; but the variety of accidents presented to me in this evening’s ramble had already sufficiently filled my head, and made me glad to retire to my repose.

C H A P. IV.

Relates some passages which, if the Author is not very much mistaken in his conjectures, will draw sighs of compassion from many a tender heart of both sexes.

THE next morning, in running over in my mind the detail of the transactions of the evening before, the vexation I had received on the score of Betty Canning very much subsided, and I looked upon the whole thing as below a serious consideration;—I could not help, indeed, retaining some concern that the people of England should be so infatuated as to suffer their thoughts to be led astray and alienated from affairs of the greatest consequence by such an idle story; but as I doubted not but that the imposition she had been guilty of would be detected, though her abettors might perhaps find means to screen her person from the punishment, I became more easy, and resolved to banish as much as possible all remembrance of it.

But

But n
poor Cle
to me I
heard, t
prevent
sion, fo
he had n
to redee
Charlott
not doub
which h
he had c

Thou
real con
age of
above t
very me
his mei
favour,
compaf
into.

In fir
a very
first obj
patienc
stances
fore the
—I
have b
punged
my litt
where
and w
street,
to kno

The
—a fer
clination

But my ideas were widely different in regard to poor Clerimont ;—as much a stranger as he was to me I was convinced, by what I had seen and heard, that as he had no stock of ready money to prevent the mortgage he had made of his reversion, so I was equally assured, by his despair, that he had no visible means of raising a sum sufficient to redeem it.——His calling on the name of Charlotte with so much vehemence made me also not doubt but that he had some tender attachment, which he fear'd would be broke through by what he had done.

Though I knew no vice for which I have a more real contempt than the love of gaming, yet the age of this gentleman, which could not exceed above two or three and twenty, seem'd to me a very moving plea in his behalf, and the graces of his mein and aspect so much interested me in his favour, that I less blamed his inadvertency than compassionated the misfortune it had brought him into.

In fine,—his person and his sufferings had made a very strong impression on me ;——he was the first object of my waking thoughts, and my impatience to be better acquainted with his circumstances obliged me to leave my bed some hours before the time in which I was accustomed to do so ;——I rose in a hurry,——transcribed what I have been relating, and got the dialogues expunged from my Tablets by the pure fingers of my little Virgin,——then hastened to the house where I had seen Clerimont enter the night before, and which, by the help of some lamps in the street, I had taken sufficient notice of to be able to know again.

The door was luckily open when I came to it ;——a servant-maid, who seem'd to have more inclination to hold a gossip's tale than to do the busi-

ness

siness she was hired for, stood leaning with both her hands upon her mop, very earnest in discourse with one of her own occupation in the neighbourhood ;—a few words serv'd to convince me that these wenches were descanting on the affairs of the families they liv'd in, which, as I was not at present in a humour to pry into, I staid not to hear what was said, but went directly into the house, and up stairs, supposing Clerimont might be lodg'd in the first floor.

I was not deceived,—I found him writing at his bureo in the dining-room,—a letter lay by him directed to Count Cogdy ;—this was folded and ready for sealing, so it was not in my power to examine the contents ; but his pen on my entrance was employ'd on another, which, looking over his shoulder, I saw was dictated in the following terms :

“ To miss CHARLOTTE *****.

“ My only dear, and for ever
“ dear CHARLOTTE,

“ A Thousand heart-rending sighs,—a thousand
“ pangs, more terrible than any death can
“ inflict, accompany every syllable of this di-
“ stracted epistle !—I foresee the anguish it will
“ give you, and feel all the weight of yours ad-
“ ded to my own.—Oh, Charlotte ! I must see
“ you no more !—that love so long cemented by
“ the utmost proofs of mutual tenderness, and
“ so near being fulfilled in a happy union, must
“ be now broke off at once,—dissolved for ever !
“ —I have renounced all claim to every future
“ good, and justly incur'd the fate that now at-
“ tends me !—a few short hours will inform
“ you, that I either do not exist at all, or exist
“ only

“ only
“ father
“ than a
“ In
“ cessity
“ pels m
“ —I g
“ killed
“ the h
“ from
“ quain
“ end
“ shall
“ fay ne
“ and
“ mory

“ P.
“ prese
“ turn
“ in ou
“ last
“ super

This
the line
Agonies
words,
gesture.

After
put both
order'd
him to b
they we
some fa

“ only to be a vagrant!—a wretched exile from
“ father, country, friends, and you more dear
“ than all!

“ In fine,—my Charlotte, such is the sad ne-
“ cessity to which I have reduced myself, as com-
“ pels me to do a thing which nature most abhors;
“ —I go this very morning either to kill or to be
“ killed,—which of these two shall happen is in
“ the hand of heaven;—each equally tears me
“ from every earthly comfort.—I chose to ac-
“ quaint you previously with this accident, to the
“ end you may be the less surprised when you
“ shall hear it from the mouth of others.—I can
“ say no more.—Farewel, thou loveliest, best,
“ and dearest of thy sex——Hate not the me-
“ mory of

“ The undone

“ CLERIMONT.

“ P. S. As I have render'd myself unworthy of
“ preserving any marks of your affection, I re-
“ turn the ring with which you blest my finger
“ in our happier days.—Accept once more my
“ last adieu;—may endless blessings wait you,
“ superior if possible, to my woes.”

This unhappy gentleman dissembled not in the lines he wrote,—his heart now labour'd with Agonies greater than could be expres'd with words, and shew'd themselves in every look and gesture.

After having carefully inclosed the ring, and put both that and the letter under a cover, he order'd a chairman to be call'd, and delivering him to both these dispatches, and telling him where they were to be carried, he proceeded to give some farther instructions:

Clerimont.

Clerimont. ‘ This, to miss Charlotte, you are
 ‘ to leave with her servant, with orders to give it
 ‘ to her lady when she is stirring :—this to Count
 ‘ Cogdy requires an immediate answer, which you
 ‘ must wait for.’

The fellow, having assured him that he would be punctual in obeying his commands, went on his errand, and Clerimont continued walking backwards and forwards in the room with a motion extremely discomposed,—then threw himself down on a settee, and presently seem’d buried, as it were, in a profound resvery.

I am pretty certain it was a full half-hour before he exchang’d this fix’d and death-like position for one in a quite contrary extreme ;—his looks and gestures now, methought had somewhat like frantic in them ;—he beat his head against the Wainscot,—stamp’d,—and ever and anon burst into the most vehement exclamations,—some of which are these :

Clerimont. ‘ How unhappy a creature is man !
 ‘ ---the very reason we are so proud of makes us
 ‘ miserable !—the brutes equally void of passions
 ‘ as of sorrow, neither feel torments here nor
 ‘ dread a future hell !—What will poor Charlotte
 ‘ say on reading of my letter !—How will my
 ‘ father support the story of my fate when it shall
 ‘ reach his ears !—Wretch ! wretch that I am,
 ‘ ---born to be a curse to all who love me !’

The return of the chairman brought him a little to his senses, and he demanded hastily whether he had got an answer from Count Cogdy ;---to which the man reply’d,

Chairman. ‘ No, sir ;---I went there first, but the
 ‘ people of the house told me he was not stirring,
 ‘ nor they believed would be for a great while,
 ‘ so I went on to madam Charlotte’s, and left
 ‘ the letter with her maid, as your honour bid me ;
 ‘ but

‘ but I
 ‘ fore he
 ‘ would
 ‘ him.’
 ‘ *Clerim*
 ‘ —Wh
 ‘ *Chair*
 ‘ *leman*
 ‘ *ther y*
 ‘ *home,*
 ‘ *that I*
 ‘ *came*
 ‘ *waited*
 ‘ *master*
 ‘ *and he*
 ‘ *o’clock*
 ‘ *and co*
 ‘ *as I di*
 ‘ *I thou*
 ‘ *Clerim*
 ‘ *myself*
 ‘ *On th*
 ‘ *the tabl*
 ‘ *comman*
 ‘ *fell int*
 ‘ *he cry’d*
 ‘ *Clerim*
 ‘ *better*
 ‘ *have f*
 ‘ *sent hi*
 ‘ *to acc*
 ‘ *Whil*
 ‘ *and bro*
 ‘ *some an*
 ‘ *just beg*
 ‘ *maid o*
 ‘ *desired*
 ‘ *hastily*

‘ but I had not got above half the street before her footboy ran after me and said his lady would speak to me, on which I went back with him.’

‘ Clerimont. ‘ Charlotte already up,—that’s strange. —What did she say to you?’

Chairman. ‘ Sir, she only ask’d where the gentleman was that sent the letter by me, and whether you are alone :—I told her you were at home, and that there was no body with you that I saw ;—she said it was very well, and I came away, went again to the Count’s, and waited there ’till his own man told me that his master had not been in bed above two hours, and he was sure would not rise ’till twelve or one o’clock at soonest ; said I might leave the letter, and come about that time for an answer ;—now as I did not know whether that would be proper, I thought best to bring it back.’

Clerimont. ‘ You did well ;—I shall see him myself.’

On this the Chairman laid down the letter on the table, and finding Clerimont had no farther commands for him withdrew—Clerimont then fell into a second pause, but it lasted not long, and he cry’d out,

Clerimont. ‘ Yes,—I will go,—and perhaps ’tis better that he did not see my billet ;—he might have found some way to evade the challenge I sent him ; but I shall now surprise and force him to accept it.’

While he was speaking he stepp’d to the closet and brought out a pair of pocket pistols, with some ammunition to load them with ;—he was just beginning to perform that work when the maid of the house came up and told him a lady desired to speak with him.—Clerimont turn’d hastily about, but before he had time to speak his

fair

fair guest was in the room.—Charlotte, for it was she herself, was very lovely, though extremely disorder'd both in her drefs and looks.—On finding how Clerimont was employ'd she thus accosted him :

Charlotte. ‘ Oh, Clerimont!—Clerimont!—
‘ what means that cruel letter you just now sent
‘ me!—Wherefore these dreadful preparations!
‘ —tell me,—this instant tell me, or I shall die
‘ with apprehension! ’

Clerimont. ‘ Ah, Charlotte! never 'till now un-
‘ welcome to my sight,—why in this fatal
‘ moment dost thou set before me that angelic
‘ form, which serves but to remind me more of
‘ the heaven I have lost? ’

Charlotte. ‘ Shock not my soul with this de-
‘ spair, yet cruelly conceal from me the caufe!
‘ —I have a right to be made the partner of your
‘ griefs as well as joys;—speak then, I conjure
‘ you,—let me know all! ’

Clerimont. ‘ I cannot! ’

Charlotte. ‘ You love me not if you hide ought
‘ from me!—the worst of evils could not give
‘ me half the pain as this uncertainty!—Clear
‘ then the tempest on your brow,—compose your
‘ mind,—remove those murd'rous instruments
‘ from my sight, and,—Ha!—what's here? ’

In pointing towards the pistols she saw the letter directed to Count Cogdy, which she hastily snatch'd up, and went on, saying,

Charlotte. ‘ A letter to that infamous villain
‘ Count Cogdy!—ah, then I gues what has
‘ happen'd,—some curs'd gaming quarrel!----
‘ Clerimont, I must read this letter.’

Clerimont. ‘ You may,----it will in part re-
‘ veal what my tongue has not the power to
‘ utter.’

Ever

Ever since my coming into the room I had been extremely impatient to see the contents of this billet,---so while the lady, with a trembling hand, was breaking open the seal, I slipp'd behind her, and read, at the same time she did, these lines :

To Count COGDY.

“ SIR,

“ I Remember that in the midst of my confusion last night you offer'd to give me my revenge whenever I should demand it, which I now do, and expect you will meet me within an hour in the long field behind the bason in Mary-le-bon, arm'd with sword and pistol; for it is not with cards or dice we now must try our skill:—you have left me nothing but my life to lose, and I am impatient 'till I stake it against yours;—come without a second, for I know no gentleman whom I would demean so far as to engage him with any of your infamous associates:—if you refuse to comply with this summons, which does you too much honour, you may depend that the first time I see you, in what place soever it be, I shall make you an example to all scoundrels, cheats, and cowards.—So no more at present from

“ CLERIMONT.

“ P. S. Send your answer by the bearer.”

Charlotte. ‘ Then you would fight! would hazard a life so precious to me, only in revenge for being defrauded of a poultry sum!—Pray how much have you lost?’

Clerimont. ‘ My all.’

Charlotte. ‘ Be more explicit.’

VOL. II.

Q

He

He then related to her all the particulars of his misfortunes, which, as the reader is already acquainted with it, would be needless to repeat.--- When he had given over speaking, Charlotte with the greatest serenity and sweetness, said to him,

Charlotte. ' And is this all that has disconcerted you in so terrible a manner ?

Clerimont. ' What means my Charlotte ! --- Am I not a beggar, — irrecoverably a beggar !'

Charlotte. ' How can that be, — when you say the writings will be return'd to you on payment of a thousand pounds ? and am not I in possession of eight times that sum, which with myself, you are shortly to be master of ?'

Clerimont. ' Plunder my Charlotte ! — no, forbid it honour, justice, love ! — first let me perish !'

Charlotte. ' Be not so rash ; — you must, you shall accept it.'

Clerimont. ' Charming generous creature ! — could I abuse such goodness, I were a villain, meaner, viler far than he that has undone me !'

Charlotte. ' Indeed I will not be denied ; and if you persist in this obstinacy, will go myself in person, pay the money and redeem the obligation.'

Clerimont. ' O speak not ! — think not of such a thing, unless you wish to see me turn against myself one of those weapons I intended for my adversary !'

Charlotte. ' Hold, Clerimont, — forbear to fright me thus ! — Just as you spoke a sudden thought started into my head as if there were a way to rid you of this incumbrance without any expence either to yourself or me.'

Cle-

Clerimont. ' How !—by what miracle !'

Charlotte. ' The project is not yet quite fashio-
‘ on’d in my brain ;——but you must come with
‘ me to my lodgings, for I dare not trust you
‘ with yourself ;——as we go perhaps I may
‘ be able to bring my scheme to more per-
‘ fection.'

Clerimont. ' Oh, Charlotte, thy softness quite
‘ unmans me !'

Charlotte. ' No 'tis your own despair unmans
‘ you ;——let me prevail on you to give only
‘ some respite to these horrible ideas.'

Clerimont. Well, you must be obey'd,—I will
‘ defer the execution of my intentions 'till ano-
‘ ther day.'

Charlotte. ' That's kind.'

Charlotte seem'd transported at having won
thus far upon him, and a coach being call'd they
both went into it ;——I listen'd to the directions
given where to drive, and eager to know what
turn this affair would take, follow'd on foot as fast
as I was able.

C H A P. V.

*May possibly become the subject of some future Comedy, as
there is nothing in the story that can be objected to by the
Licence-Office.*

AMONG all the indefatigable enquiries I had
so long been making after things intended to
be kept secret, never had my curiosity met with
a greater disappointment than it did at the time
I am speaking of ;——I arriv'd at the house where
Charlotte lodg'd the very moment that the coach
which brought that lady and her lover thither was
discharg'd and driving off, and had the mortifica-

tion to see the door shut when I was not at the distance of above ten paces from it.

Every present minute however flattering me with the hopes that the succeeding ones would be more successful, I waited, tho' I cannot say with much patience, the whole time, for the space of about two hours, no one having any occasion, I suppose, either to go out or in;—at last a friendly baker knock'd at the door, which being open'd, I took the opportunity to slip in while he deliver'd a loaf of bread to the servant of the house.

I went up stairs, and found the persons I sought for in the dining-room;—but here, alas, I was a second time disappointed,—the grand consultation between them was over before my entrance, and what I heard after I came in could not make me able to form any judgment of the subject they had been upon;—I could only know that something of great moment had been concluded, as the reader will easily perceive by the following short dialogue:

Charlotte. ‘ You cannot imagine how much you have oblig'd me by this ready concession;—but I will not detain you lest the villain should be gone out.—Remember to fix the appointment at seven, or between seven and eight this evening.’

Clerimont. ‘ Yes, yes.’

Charlotte. ‘ By that time I shall be able to get every thing in order, — and you will see I shall play my part as well as the best actress of them all,—do you only take care that no unguarded look or word gives the Count any room to suspect you are less in good humour than you pretend to be.’

Clerimont.

Clerimont. ‘ Fear not, — — — I shall be cautious
‘ not to spoil so good a plot by my ill perform-
‘ ance.’

Charlotte. ‘ If it succeeds, as I have not the
‘ least doubt but it will, the story will be a subject
‘ of mirth for us as lasting as our lives.’

Clerimont. ‘ And as lasting a subject for my ad-
‘ miration of the wit and contrivance of my dear,
‘ dear Charlotte.’

Charlotte. ‘ Well, well, — — — defer your enco-
‘ comiums till a more seasonable opportunity ;
‘ — — — I long, methinks, to have this busines
‘ over, and it is high time for you to begin to set
‘ the first wheel of our machine in motion.’

Clerimont. ‘ I am going. — — — Adieu, my
‘ love.’

He accompanied these words with a very tender
and passionate salute, then left the room ; tho’ I
easily perceived that Charlotte had somewhat of
great importance to transact in this affair, yet as
I could not be in two places at once, I chose to
follow Clerimont.

He went directly to the Lodgings of Count
Cogdy, and on asking if he were at home was
shew’d into a handsome parlour, where, after
waiting about a minute and a half, the Count’s
servant came to him, and said his master had not
been long out of bed, and was not quite dress’d,
but desir’d he would walk up ; — — — which he
did, with his invisible attendant close behind
him.

The Count no sooner saw him enter than he ran
to embrace him with a French complaisance, say-
ing at the same time,

Count Cogdy. ‘ Dear Clerimont, I am glad to
‘ see you.’

Clerimont. ‘ My dear Count, a lucky morning
‘ you.——I behav’d somewhat oddly last night,
‘ and could not be easy ’till I came and ask’d your
‘ pardon.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Oh, sir, you have it, you have
‘ it;——I thought no more of it;——I
‘ know ’tis natural for a gentleman to be a little
‘ out of humour at first losing his money.’

Clerimont. ‘ But I was less excusable than you
‘ imagine;——for to confess the truth, I had
‘ in bank-bills upwards of two thousand pounds
‘ lying in my buree at home,—so was under no
‘ necessity either of playing upon tick or of trou-
‘ bling a lawyer to mortgage the reversion of my
‘ estate.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Is it possible!——Are you in
‘ earnest?’

Clerimont. ‘ To convince you I am so you shall
‘ have the testimony of your own eyes;——
‘ see here, Count,—and here.’

In speaking this he took out of his pocket-book
several bills to the amount of the sum he had
mention’d;——the Count stretch’d his eyes
broad open, look’d at the bills,——seem’d much
surprised, and said,

Count Cogdy. ‘ These are bank-bills, indeed?’

Clerimont. ‘ Aye,——I can turn them into
‘ ready specie at any banker’s in town.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Well, I cannot help wondering
‘ how a man who had two thousand pounds by
‘ him could suffer himself to be disconcerted at
‘ the loss of one.’

Clerimont. ‘ Hang it,—it was not the loss
‘ of the money that vex’d me;——but I had got
‘ the hyppo, and that damn’d hyppo makes one
‘ affront one’s best friends.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ So then I suppose you will re-
‘ deem your mortgage?’

Clerimont.

Clerimont. ' Time enough for that.—But now I think on it, you offer'd me my revenge, and I'll e'en try my chance once more.'

Count Cogdy. ' As how ?'

Clerimont. ' Why stake one of these thousands against my mortgage ;—so either win the horse or lose the saddle.'

Count Cogdy. ' With all my heart,—whenever you please.'

Clerimont ' Let it be to-night then.'

Count Cogdy. ' Agreed.—Will you stay and dine with me ?'

Clerimont. ' I am engag'd with a young fellow just come to town, and to the possession of a great estate ; but I will meet you at night and bring him with me if I can.'

Count Cogdy. ' Do ;—I shall be glad of his acquaintance.'

Clerimont. ' We knew one another in the country, he will go any where with me.—But hark'ye, Count, I don't like that house we were in last night,—every thing in it, methinks, has the face of meaneſ, poverty, and ill-luck ;—my young spark is vastly nice, and will be apt to turn up his nose at it ;—can't you think of a more agreeable place ?'

Count Cogdy. ' I know of several ;—the only reason that makes me chuse to go thither so often is because I think it the most safe ;—this cursed act of parliament has laid such restriction on us who love play, that it is not every where we dare venture to indulge ourselves in that diversion.'

Clerimont. ' What objection have you to Mixum's, in ***** street ?'

Count Cogdy. ' 'Tis a good house, and excellent accommodation.—But don't you know that it

‘ was search’d three or four nights ago by a whole posse of constables?’

Clerimont. ‘ Yes,—but they found nothing of what they came to look for,—therefore the more secure at present, as they will scarce come again in haste.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Well then we will meet there if you please.—At what hour?’

Clerimont. ‘ Seven, or a little after,—if it suits you.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Extremely well;—then we shall have the whole evening before us.’

He was about to take his leave, and had rose up for that purpose, when Tom Wheadle, Jack Hazard and Coaxum came all together into the room;—they seem’d a little surpriz’d at seeing him there, but saluted him with their usual familiarity.

Jack Hazard. ‘ Hah! — dear *Clerimont*, good morning to you.’

Tom Wheadle. ‘ Now you look like yourself again;—you were quite another man last night.’

Coaxum. ‘ Aye faith,—you must expect to be well roasted.’

Clerimont. ‘ I know I deserve it; but you must defer your sarcasms ’till night; for I am in great haste at present,—so, gentlemen, your servant.’

He was going out of the room with these words; but just as he came to the door he turn’d back and said to *Count Cogdy*.

Clerimont. ‘ Be sure, Count, not to forget to bring the writings with you.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ No, no,— they have never been out of my pocket since you deliver’d them to me last night.’

There

There pass'd no more between them,—Clermont went hastily down stairs, and I gladly would have follow'd him, but Jack Hazard and Tom Wheadle happen'd to stand between the door and the corner where I had unluckily posted myself, so that it was impossible for me to remove my quarters without running a very great risque of being felt either by the one or the other.

During the short time I was compell'd to stay I heard the following conversation, which I would not trouble my readers with the repetition of, but to shew what monsters of mankind these degenerate wretches are who get their livelihood by gaming.

Coaxum. ‘ What does he mean by writings ?
‘ ——sure he is not going to redeem his mort-
‘ gage ! ’

Count Cogdy. ‘ No ; but he is going to send a
‘ thousand, or 'tis likely two thousand pounds after
‘ it.——We have made an appointment to play
‘ again to night.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ What ! upon tick ?

Tom Wheadle. ‘ Phoo,——that is doing of
‘ nothing,——the fool has no more estates in
‘ reversion to make over.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ You cannot imagine me so weak
‘ as to lose my time with a fellow that has no mo-
‘ ney nor effects ;——no, no, I always go upon
‘ good grounds.——I tell you he has two thou-
‘ sand pounds in Bank-bills, —— he shew'd them
‘ to me.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ How did he come by them ? ’

Count Cogdy. ‘ 'Tis no matter to us how he came
‘ by them, we are sure of making them ours be-
‘ fore we sleep.’

Tom Wheadle. ‘ They must certainly be bills
‘ his father has intrusted him with, to buy stock
‘ either for himself or some of his friends in the

‘ country ;——the young fellow will hang himself to-morrow, when he reflects on what he has done.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ Let him hang himself when we have got all he has to lose.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Aye, aye,——’tis best for him and us too that he should put himself out of the way.——But I can tell you better news than this,——he brings a rich young heir with him, one that knows nothing of the world,——a mere sap,——a greenhorn ;——there will be fleecing, my boys !’

Just as the Count had done speaking some little noise in the street made them all run to the windows, by which means I got the so-much wish’d for opportunity of escaping from my confinement.

When I found myself at liberty I began to consider not only on what I had seen and heard, but also on what I had not seen nor heard ;——I was still as much in the dark as ever as to Charlotte’s contrivance, and could not keep myself from fretting at the many disappointments I had met with on that account ;——I was doom’d, however, to receive yet one more.

Though I doubted not but when the gamesters met the whole would be laid open to me, yet the time seem’d too tedious for my impatience,——I wanted to know the busines of the plot before I saw it acted, and set myself to think on the most probable means to accomplish my designs,——accordingly I went to the lodgings of Charlotte, hoping to find Clerimont there, and discover something farther by the discourse they would have together ; but to my great mortification perceived the rooms quite empty, excepting a little lap-dog lying on a cushion before the fire.

I had

I had now no other resource than to go home to dinner, which I did, and after having got my Tablets made ready to receive a new impression, diverted myself in the best manner I could 'till the hour arriv'd which enabled me to explore what at present appear'd so mysterious to me.

C H A P. VI.

*Will put a final period to the suspense of my readers,
in relation to Clerimont and Charlotte.*

AS precious a thing as time is, and as much as I always knew the real value of it, the hours methought, moved slowly on 'till the clock struck seven, and told me that I might now hope for the full eclaircissement of an adventure I had already taken so much fruitless pains to explore.

Pretty secure, however, that I should not lose my labour any more on this occasion, I went with great glee and jollity of mind to the house of Mr. Mixum, —— Count Cogdy and his three associates came presently after, and were shew'd into the best room, where I accompanied them. —— On their calling for wine Mixum came up with it himself to pay his compliments, as not having seen them for a considerable time, and there ensued some discourse concerning the search-warrant that had been granted against the house, — the manner in which those persons who were there had made their escape from the officers, and such like affairs, which not being at all material to my purpose I not regarded, nor spread my Tablets to receive.

Within:

Within about half an hour Clerimont and his young friend appear'd;—the first sight of the latter extremely struck me,—I thought I had somewhere seen that face, but when or where, or on what occasion, I could not presently recollect, and it was some minutes before I knew this seeming beau for a real belle;—in fine, that it was no other than Charlotte herself:—she was, indeed, so artfully disguised in all points, that a person much better acquainted with her features might have been deceived;—her cheeks which had naturally no more red in them than was necessary to preserve her complexion from the character of a dead paleness, were now, by the help of Carmine or Portugal paste, of a high ruddy colour;—her eye-brows which were of a fine light brown, were now black as jet; and that sweet and modest air, so becoming in the amiable Charlotte, converted into one all bold and rakish.

Clerimont, with a well-dissembled gaiety in his voice and countenance, presented her to the company, telling them he had taken the liberty to introduce a friend, whose conversation he doubted not but would be agreeable to them.—They received her with the greatest politeness and good breeding;—for I must here observe, that tho' these men, either through the calamities of the times or their own mismanagement and ill conduct, were reduced to the wretched course they now took for subsistence, they had all of them been endowed with a liberal education, and knew how to behave like persons of real honour and fashion whenever they found it suitable to their interest to do so.

The glass went round two or three times while they talk'd only on ordinary matters; but our fair Amazon, being impatient, I suppose, to put the finishing

finishing stroke to the stratagem she had form'd started up on a sudden, and said,

Charlotte. ' Well but, gentlemen, how are we to pass the evening,—I hope in somewhat more agreeable than mere chit-chat? — Clerimont talk'd of play, and I see you have implements ready.'

Count Cogdy. ' Sir, we amuse ourselves that way sometimes,—and if you chuse it shall be ready to oblige you.'

Charlotte. ' Oh by all means;—I love play extravagantly,— the music of a dice-box is to me beyond all Handel's operas and oratorios; —here is more real harmony than in the spheres themselves, and I could dance eternally to the sound.'

In speaking these last words she snatch'd up a dice-box, and began to rattle it with all her force; —then sung this catch:

‘ Away with dull cares,
‘ That bring on grey hairs,
‘ Let them fleet with the day,
‘ And wine, women, and play,
‘ With jovial delights,
‘ Engrois all our nights.’

While the stranger appear'd thus unattentive to every thing, Jack Hazard, who sat next to Coaxum, whisper'd to him,

Jack Hazard. ' This is a fine sprightly spark; but I fancy we shall make him grow somewhat more grave before we have done with him.'

Coaxum. ' I wonder what could induce Clerimont to bring him, after having lost so much among us.'

Jack Hazard. ' Oh, take it for a rule,—when a man begins to find himself undone, he is willing

‘ ling to bring all his acquaintance into the same condition.’

They had time for no more,—Charlotte addressing herself to them all in general, said,

Charlotte. ‘ Come, gentlemen,—which of you will engage me,—I have some loose pieces in my pocket, which I am ready to throw away, if chance should so determine?’

Jack Hazard. ‘ Then, sir, I am your man, if you think fit;—for I know the Count has made an agreement to play with Clerimont on a very particular occasion.’

Charlotte. ‘ Then, sir, I will content myself a while with being a by-stander.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ You need not, sir,—you see here are more tables than one.’

Charlotte. ‘ Aye; but I chuse to bet on my friend’s side.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ Nay, as you please for that—we shall any of us be ready to take you up.’

The Count and Clerimont being now in an attitude to play, and the writings laid down on the one side and a thousand pound bank-bill on the other, Charlotte cry’d out,

Charlotte. ‘ What!—paper against parchment!—these are the oddest stakes I ever saw.—Yours, Clerimont, I think, is a thousand pounds?’

Count Cogdy. ‘ I assure, you, sir, that mine is the full equivalent.’

Charlotte. ‘ I believe so;—but before you begin you must give me leave to speak a word or two.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ As many as you please, sir.’

Charlotte. ‘ It is only this:—you must lose, Count.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Must lose, sir?’

Charlotte. ‘ Aye, sir, must lose.’

Count

Count
• shall de
Count
• tune, a
• tings to
Jack E
Count
Charlotte
• dice w
• you m
• of rev
• securit
• of;
• am co
Count
• threat
• part
Jack
• by fu
Charlotte
• that
• a wa
• bring
• Hell
• —T
• —th
• who
• up a
The
all the
had t
had t
runni
M
• —
• on
• ca
• an

Count Cogdy. ‘ That, sir, will happen as fortune shall decree.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Sir, I stand in the place of fortune, and tell you that you must lose those writings to Clerimont.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ What means all this?’

Count Cogdy. ‘ I do not understand you sir.’

Charlotte. ‘ I will speak plainer;—your false dice will be of no service to you at this time;—you must willingly return to Clerimont that deed of reversion, which you drew him in to sign as a security for money you had basely cheated him of;—I say willingly,—for if you do not I am come prepar’d with means to force you to it.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Sir, I scorn both your words and threats;—I never cheated any man, nor will part with what chance has bestow’d upon me.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ ‘Sdeath,—shall we be bullied by such a prig?’

Charlotte. ‘ None of your big words,—I have that will silence you;—see here;—the copy of a warrant from Justice Ferrit, to apprehend and bring before him the bodies of George Van Hellmock, alias Count Cogdy,—John Hazard,—Thomas Wheadle,—and William Coaxum;—the original of this is in the hands of persons who on the least stamp of my foot, will come up and put it in execution.’

The gamesters now look’d on each other with all the marks of consternation; but before they had time to make any reply to what Charlotte had said, Mixum, all pale and trembling, came running into the room, and said,

Mixum. ‘ Oh, gentlemen,—we are all undone!—three or four constables are at the door,——one of my drawers saw them as he went out to carry a pint of wine to a neighbour’s house; and there is a young man below too, who I dare say

‘ say is a spy, for he does not stay in the room, but walks backwards and forwards in the entry, and looks at every body as they pass by;—so that there is no escaping either one way or other.’

Charlotte. ‘ He tells you truth;—the person he speaks of is planted there by me, and on my giving the signal will call in his mirmidons;—so that you have nothing for it but to deliver the writings quietly to Clerimont;—if you do this I will instantly go down and send away the officers, under pretence that the information was wrong, and that no gamesters are here.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Confusion!—What is to be done?’

Jack Hazard. ‘ Sdeath, Count!—do not part with the writings!—we’ll fight our way through them!’

Charlotte. ‘ Nay then I give the signal.’

She advanced towards the door with these words; but Mixum threw himself between, and with the most pity-moving gesture said,

Mixum. ‘ Hold, sir, I beseech you,—consider I never offended you.—do not ruin me and my house for ever!’

Clerimont. ‘ Oh, you will be provided with lodgings in Bridewell, and fare no worse than these worthy gentlemen here, your customers’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Well, I did not think mr. Clerimont would have turn’d informer.’

Clerimont. ‘ Nor did I think I had associated myself with common sharpers, cheats and villains, ’till last night convinced me of it.’

Charlotte. ‘ These altercations are only loss of time,—the officers will be impatient;—speak, Count, resolve at once;—Shall I dismiss, or call them to the exercise of their function?’

Count

Coun
 • say y
 Tom
 • and t
 Coax
 Jack
 • give
 Coun
 • to be
 • mr.
 • but I
 • like a
 Cler
 • cond
 • a ga
 • all
 • wor
 • take
 • mon
 • coy
 • ny e
 • so n
 • are
 • wh
 • Con
 • war
 • to y
 Cb
 • suc
 • go.
 Cl
 • N
 any
 these
 no in
 pass’
 the
 nion

Count Cogdy. ‘ Hell and the devil ! — What say you, gentlemen ? ’

Tom Wheadle. ‘ E’en give up the writings, and the devil go with them.’

Coaxum. ‘ Ay, ay, give them up.’

Jack Hazard. ‘ Since there is no remedy I give my vote.’

Count Cogdy. ‘ Nothing vexes me so much as to be thus outwitted, gull’d, trick’d. — There, mr. Clerimont, take back your mortgage ; — but I must tell you, sir, that you have not acted like a gentleman.’

Clerimont. ‘ I threw off the gentleman when I condescended to play in such company ; — a gamester is the lowest and most infamous of all characters ; nay the most dangerous too ; worse even than a highway robber, — he takes but part, — you plunder, without remorse, the whole fortune of him whom you decoy into your snares ; — nor can there be any excuse from your necessities, while we have so numerous a fleet and standing army, which are continually wanting recruits, and refuse none who have health and vigour.

Count Cogdy. ‘ Sir, you have got what you wanted, — so pray keep your remonstrances to yourself.’

Charlotte. ‘ Aye, aye, — advice is lost on such harden’d profligates. — Come, let us go.’

Clerimont. ‘ I attend you.’

Neither Clerimont nor his fair champion said any more, but went directly out of the room ; — a volley of curses from the mouths of all these miscreants pursued their steps. — I had no inclination to stay where I was ; but just as I pass’d the door I heard Jack Hazard, who was the most violent of the four, say to his companions,

Jack

Jack Hazard. ‘ It is that saucy pert young Coxcomb that has spirited up Clerimont to do all this ; but if ever I meet him in a convenient place I’ll pink him,——I’ll make a loop-hole in his flesh big enough to let out twenty such puny souls.’

I could not forbear laughing within myself at this menace, which, though it shew’d the villainous disposition of the wretch who spoke it, I knew was impossible ever to reach the person it was levell’d against.

The amiable and witty Charlotte kept her promise, and on her coming down stairs gave orders to the young man who waited her commands to send away the constables,——after which she took coach with her lover, attended with as many blessings and good wishes from Mixum as she had been loaded with curses from those above.

As I could expect no more from this adventure than the retributions of Clerimont to his beloved Charlotte for the happy deliverance she had given him from destruction, and which I could easily conceive without hearing, I return’d to my own apartment, in order to get my Tablets made ready for the acquisition of some new discovery.

I must not however, take leave of these lovers without letting the public know that a marriage between them, which had some time before been agreed upon, is now consummated, and that Clerimont, sincerely touch’d with the danger he has escaped, has made a firm resolution never to play but for very small sums, and for those only with persons whose honour and integrity he is well assured of.

As for the Gamesters, they still continue to infest this great town, like Satan watching to devour all the prey they can get into their clutches ;——If this little narrative may warn any one person

to

to avoid the
plain it will

This the
tion of
short e
and un

I Some
sitors
enjoyme
those of
great de
ner of
to the y

It w
gentlem
tune, a
a certai
him of
fail oth
him.

Wh
himself
that it
both i
the m
even t
sulting
ver de
opinio
stantly
multit

His
has be
never

to avoid the snare, the pains I have taken to explain it will be well rewarded.

C H A P. VII.

This the Author has calculated chiefly for the speculation of the serious part of his readers, and is short enough to be easily pass'd over by the more gay and unattentive.

I Sometimes make one among the number of visitors to a good old lady, who being past the enjoyment of all the pleasures of life, except those of conversation, loves company and keeps a great deal, as her cheerful and entertaining manner of behaviour renders her agreeable even to the youth of both sexes.

It was at her house I first saw Mr. Wary, a gentleman of an ancient family, an affluent fortune, and an extreme good Character; but has a certain peculiarity of humour which deprives him of some part of that respect he could not fail otherwise of attracting from as many as know him.

Whether it be owing to an over diffidence of himself, or of others, it is hard to determine; that it seems to me that there is a mixture of both in his composition; for he goes not about the most minute and insignificant affair in life, even to the buying a suit of cloaths, without consulting the whole round of his acquaintance, never depending on his own judgment, or on the opinion of any one friend whatsoever; but constantly adhering to this maxim:— that in a multitude of counsellors there is wisdom.

His age at this time does not exceed forty, he has been a widower upwards of twelve years, yet never had the courage to venture on a second marriage,

marriage, because he could find no woman whom every body approv'd of:—he is the father of one son, a very promising youth, now about thirteen, of whom he is extremely tender, and so very careful of his education that he would never trust him at any public school, and has him instructed at home in every thing he thinks necessary he should learn; but it frequently happens that a great deal of time is lost in providing tutors who seem to him every way qualified for the trust to be reposed in them.

There was nothing in the character of this gentleman that excited my curiosity to know any thing farther of him than what I did;—indeed I could hope to make no discoveries worthy of my invisible inspection, in the family of a person who had neither wife nor daughter, was not distinguish'd for any particular vice or virtue, never intermeddled in public affairs, saw little company, and lived in a very retir'd manner; therefore I never had a thought of visiting him.

But it often happens that we are sway'd by an unaccountable impulse to do things which have no meaning in them, nor afford the least prospect either of pleasure or advantage; and it was in one of these sudden starts that I found myself hurried into his house, seeing the door open as I casually pass'd through the street where he lives.

I found him sitting in an easy chair in his back parlour, with a letter in his hand; but having just finished the reading of it as I came in, I had not the opportunity at that time of seeing what it contained;—a moment after a servant entered, and told him Mr. Seewell was come to wait on him,—on which he ordered him to be introduced, and as soon as he was so, said to him,

Mr.

Mr. W
well,—
I was ju
Mr. S
portuno
happy
Mr. W
You r
have a
mathem
out a
him;
very g
Mr.
Mr.
—Th
him, I
quam
Papist
which
recon
not g
house
induc
I wo
all hi
Pope
Mr.
right
Mr.
that
it w
this
me
Mr.
man

Mr. Wary. ‘ Oh, my good friend mr. Seewell,—you are the most welcome man alive ;—
‘ I was just wishing for you.’

Mr. Seewell. ‘ I am glad then I came so opportunely.—But pray on what account am I so happy ?’

Mr. Wary. ‘ Sit down and I will tell you.—
‘ You must know I am desirous my son should have a little insight of some branches of the mathematics, and accordingly have been laying out a good while for a proper person to instruct him ;—at last I heard of one who they say has very great abilities, and is of a sober character.’

Mr. Seewell. ‘ That was lucky.’

Mr. Wary. ‘ Aye, but you have not heard all.—The very next day after I had agreed with him, happening to mention his name to an acquaintance of mine, I was informed that he is a Papist,—born and bred a Papist ; —on which I presently sent to desire the person who recommended him, to let him know he need not give himself the trouble to come to my house, and also to give him the reasons that induced me to forbid him ; for, mr. Seewell, I would rather have my son kept in ignorance all his life, than have his principles tainted with Popery and Jacobitism.’

Mr. Seewell. ‘ You are very much in the right.’

Mr. Wary. ‘ Aye, I think I am ;—yet for all that I am strangely puzzled, and divided, as it were, in my thoughts ;—he sent me a letter this morning,—you shall read it, and then give me your advice what to do.’

Mr. Seewell. ‘ The best I can you may command.’

Mr.

Mr. Wary then put the letter into his hands, which I read at the same time he did, and found it contained these lines :

To LEMUEL WARY, Esq;

“ S I R,

“ I CANNOT forbear being extremely shocked
“ at the disappointment I have received ; but
“ am much more surprised at the reasons you as-
“ sign for thinking me unworthy the honour of
“ instructing your son in a science which has not
“ the least connexion either with religion or poli-
“ tics.—I shall never be ashamed to own myself a
“ member of the Church of Rome ; but am as
“ far from being a Jacobite as you or any one can
“ be, and think it easy to convince you, that my
“ being the one is a sufficient proof that I cannot
“ be the other.

“ I know that weak minds are strangely carryed
“ away by mere words ; but they cannot long
“ have any influence with persons of understand-
“ ing ;—you, sir, need but give yourself the
“ trouble of a few moments consideration to see
“ plainly how utterly inconsistent it is with the
“ interest of a true Roman Catholic to wish the
“ Pretender, or any of his race, should ever be
“ seated on the throne of these kingdoms.

“ What, sir, could we hope for from a person
“ who could not favour us, if he were so inclined,
“ without endangering himself ;—a person, who,
“ tho' bred in the principles of the Church of
“ Rome, and still professes to adhere to them,
“ yet put his eldest son under the tuition of three
“ the most zealous enemies of our religion ?—I
“ need not tell you I mean the lords Dunbar and

“ Invernes

“ Inverness, both of the Kirk of Scotland, and
“ Lascelles, an eminent divine of the Church of
“ England.—What, I say, could we expect, were
“ a revolution ever to happen in the favour of
“ that family, which Heaven forbid, but to be de-
“ prived of all those privileges the goodness of his
“ present Majesty permits us the enjoyment of,
“ and to be discountenanced even more than the
“ worst of all those numerous sectaries which di-
“ vide the nation?

“ Please, sir, to cast a short retrospect on the
“ transactions of the late rebellion;—Were not
“ the heads of Clans, and those of the Nobles
“ who listed under the banner of the young Preten-
“ der in Scotland, all protestants, the duke of Perth
“ excepted?—Were not those few whom he
“ pick'd up in England Protestants, sons of the
“ Reformation, and most of them of the esta-
“ blished Church.---Those of our persuasion nei-
“ ther abett'd or any way assist'd the Adventu-
“ rer's undertaking; and sure if our hearts had
“ been affected to his cause, our hands would not
“ have been inactive, our number is not so in-
“ considerable as not to have done some service;
“ and then, if ever, was the time to have shew-
“ ed ourselves;—but our peaceful behaviour at
“ that time ought, methinks, to be a sufficient
“ testimony to the whole world how little we
“ deserve to be stigmatis'd with the appellation of
“ Jacobites.

“ Thus much, sir, in relation to my politics;
“ —and as to the other part of your objection,
“ —I do assure you, upon the word of a chri-
“ stian and a man of honour, that I shall never
“ mingle matters of religion in my discourse with
“ any of my pupils.

“ If,

“ If, after this declaration, you think me
 “ worthy of attending your son, the best of my
 “ endeavours shall not be wanting to instruct him
 “ in the science I profess to teach, and in all other
 “ things to prove that I am,

“ With the greatest respect,

“ SIR,

“ Your most obedient, and

“ Humble servant,

“ P. NEUTER.

Mr. Wary. “ Well, sir, what do you think of
 “ this epistle? — Pray give me your opinion can-
 “ didly.”

Mr. Seewell. “ Why really, mr. Wary, there
 “ are some things in it which cannot be denied;
 “ yet I would not advise you, by any means, to
 “ put him over your son.”

Mr. Wary. “ Not if I am convinced he is no
 “ Jacobite?”

Mr. Seewell. “ What then; — you are con-
 “ vinced he is a Papist, and being such, cannot
 “ cordially wish well to any who are Protestants;
 “ — the very principles of his uncharitable religi-
 “ on forbid that he should do so; — the Church of
 “ Rome looks on what they call the Northern He-
 “ rely in a worse light than Paganism; — and
 “ though, as he says, they may not desire a
 “ change of government in favour of the Preten-
 “ der, yet they would doubtless be glad to see, not
 “ only these kingdoms, but all those where the

“ Reformati-

“ Refo
 “ ana
 “ Mr.
 “ well
 “ secu
 “ Mr.
 “ be th
 “ sinc
 “ mak
 “ not
 “ how
 “ Tut
 “ Mr.
 “ with
 “ pret
 “ Her
 subje&
 enter
 conse
 tunity
 I sh
 madve
 conver
 ry one
 able.

Conta
 am
 lad
 abli

T
 conver
 V

‘ Reformation has taken place, involved in blood, anarchy and confusion.’

Mr. Wary. ‘ It is very true, indeed, mr. Seewell;—they have always shewn a spirit of persecution in them.’

Mr. Seewell. ‘ Hating us as they do, it would be the greatest weakness to imagine they would sincerely contribute any thing towards our making a shining figure in the world; and cannot therefore be looked upon as duly qualified, however able they may be in other respects, for Tutors or Preceptors to our youth.’

Mr. Wary. ‘ No, no,—I will have nothing to do with him;—I will not be cajoled by his fair pretences.’

Here they broke off all farther speech on this subject; and as I found they were beginning to enter on matters which did not seem to me of any consequence, I left them and took the first opportunity of going out of the house.

I shall not trouble my readers with any animadversions either on mr. Neuter’s letter or the conversation which ensued upon it, but leave every one to judge as he shall think most reasonable.

C H A P. VIII.

Contains such a sort of method for the cure of an amorous constitution, as perhaps there are more ladies than one who will not think themselves obliged to the Author for revealing.

TH E R E is no resentment so implacable and lasting as that which is occasioned by love converted into hatred by ill treatment; and by

VOL. II.

R

the

the more slow degree this passion rises in our minds, the more virulent it becomes after having once gained possession.

Cleanthes, a gentleman of a good family, great worth, and opulent estate, loved to the most romantic excess a young woman, who, excepting a tolerable share of beauty, had no one real charm to recommend her to a person of his character:—she was meanly born, more meanly educated;—she was silly, vain, capricious, and of a reputation not quite unblemished.

Yet did he no sooner become acquainted with her than he broke off the addresses he had long made to a lady of great merit and fortune; and in a short time, contrary to all the remonstrances and dissuasions of his friends, publickly married her.

Being a husband made him not less a lover;—his obsequiousness is not to be parallel'd;—his whole study was to please her, every succeeding day brought with it an addition of his dotage of her;—he was always happy in her presence, never easy in her absence;—and, to use Shakespeare's expression,

“Appetite increas'd by what it fed on.”

Aglaura, for so she is call'd, had so little sense of the happiness she enjoy'd, or affection or gratitude for the man who bestow'd it on her, that she presently gave the greatest loose to her too amorous inclinations;—thought of nothing but engaging new admirers, and to that end made advances, which would be shocking to repeat, to every pretty fellow she came in company with, even before the face of her much injured husband, who, blinded by his passion, for a long time look-

ed

ed on all she did as proceeding only from the too great vivacity of her temper.

Had she observed the least degree of circumspection in her amours, he would scarce ever have believed there was a possibility of her being guilty ;—but she took no pains to deceive him, and tho' she knew he lived but in her sight, was scarce ever at home ; and, through the want either of artifice or complaisance, gave herself not the pains of making any excuses for her continual rambles.

This made him at last fall into a deep melancholy ; yet still he loved her, and could not for a great while prevail on himself to lay any restrictions on her conduct :—all who had any knowledge of the manner in which they lived together, while they highly condemned her treatment of him, were ready to despise his lenity and forbearance.

At length, however, the tables were entirely turned ;—from having been at first the most fond, and afterwards the passive husband, he became, all at once, the most cruel and tyrannic ;—he took from her all the jewels and other ornaments he had bestowed upon her, locked her into a garret, suffered no one to come near her, except a servant who carried food to her of the coarsest kind, and no more than would just suffice to keep her from perishing.

It cannot be supposed but that so strange an alteration in the behaviour of the late fond, and indeed madly doating Cleanthes, must become the subject of much conversation in town.—A lady of my acquaintance, who is reckoned to have a pretty taste for poetry, shewed me a few lines she had wrote extempore on the occasion, which I think may not be disagreeable to my readers.—They are as follow :

*On the present cruelty of CLEANTHES, to a Wife
whom he once loved to as great an excess.*

' **A**S tapers languish at th' approach of day,
 ' And, by degrees, melt flow their shine
 ' away,
 ' Awhile they glimmer with contracted fires,
 ' Trembling, unable to relax their spires ;
 ' But when the sun's broad eye is open'd wide,
 ' And beams, thick flashing, shoot on ev'ry side,
 ' No more their emulative force they try,
 ' But, struck with radiance, sink at once and die.
 ' So in his heart love long maintain'd its place,
 ' Till full conviction glar'd him in the face,
 ' And forc'd th' unwilling softness to give way
 ' To hate, and rage, and fierce resentment's sway.
 ' Unhappy man !
 ' What wild extremes hurry thy headstrong
 ' will ? }
 ' What boist'rous passions thy vex'd bosom fill ? }
 ' To reason's sacred rules a truant still.
 ' Whoe'er he be the golden main foregoes,
 ' Exchanges hop'd for joys for certain woes.'

By all the discourses I heard wherever I went, concerning this affair, I found, that though scarce any one pitied Aglaura, yet almost every one condemn'd Cleanthes, no less for his present ill usage of her, than they had formerly done for the extravagance of his love.

' It is beneath the dignity of a man of sense or
 ' honour, — said one, — to treat thus inhu-
 ' manly a woman, how unworthy soever she
 ' may be, who is yet his wife.
 ' If she is really guilty of having wronged his
 ' bed, — cryed another, — as indeed there is not
 ' the least room to doubt, why, on the discove-
 ry

try of her crime, did he not turn her out of doors?—why did he not sue for a divorce?"

It is certain that his way of proceeding with her appeared so odd, that many people were apt to think that her present sufferings were owing rather to a change in his own humour, than to any detection he had made of her falsehood:—others, on the contrary, imagined he still lov'd her, and that after he had punished her a while he would forgive all that was past, and again take her to his bosom.

Various, and widely different conjectures were formed in relation both to the husband and the wife, at all which I laugh'd in my sleeve, believing,—I dare say with a good deal of reason,—that no one person in the whole world, excepting the Invisible Spy, was at the bottom of this secret;—the means by which I became master of it I shall now acquaint my readers with.

I supped one night at the house of an intimate friend at Kensington, and happening to stay there more late than it was judg'd safe for me to go home alone, was very much press'd by him to take a servant with me;—but I, knowing I had a better security about me than any servant could be, rejected his offer, and when I was got a little way from the house girded on my Belt of Invisibility, and walk'd on at my leisure, equally free from danger as from fear.

Foolhardy, as I perhaps was look'd upon for venturing alone through Hyde-Park, on account of some ill accidents had lately happen'd there:—it was not above nine o'clock when I left Kensington,—an hour which I thought too late to make any other visits, and too soon to shut myself up in my own apartment;—therefore, as the night was pleasant and pretty warm, the season consider-

dered, I saunter'd towards the Serpentine River, revolving in my mind some part of the conversation I had just been entertained with.

Many minutes had not elapsed in this employment before I was disturbed from it by the murmurs of some human voices, which I heard at a small distance;—my natural curiosity making me draw nearer to the place whence the sound proceeded, I easily distinguished a man of a good appearance holding by the arm a genteel well dress'd woman, whom he seemed rather to drag than lead towards the banks of the river;—as these persons were no other than Cleanthes and Aglaura, I shall insert what was said by each of them under their respective names.

Aglaura. ‘Indeed this is mighty foolish, Cleanthes;—I cannot imagine what should make you bring me hither at this time of night.’

Cleanthes. ‘Have a little patience, you shall know presently.’

Aglaura. ‘I will not stir one step farther 'till you tell me.’

Cleanthes. ‘Then you must be forced.—Come, come,—no resistance.’

Aglaura. ‘How do I know but you may have a design to murder me?’

Cleanthes. ‘No, I have too much regard for myself to go such lengths.—Perhaps, indeed, if you provoke me by your obstinacy, I may chance to spoil that face you are so vain upon.—I can use my sword to other purposes than killing.’

With these words he drew his sword, the point of which glittering in her eyes as he pull'd her roughly forwards, frighted her so much that she presently scream'd out.

Aglaura.

Aglaura. ‘ Ah !—help ! help !—Is there no body near to save me ?’

Cleantbes. ‘ Be hush’d ;—a second outcry and your nose goes off.’

Aglaura. ‘ Oh lud !—Oh lud !—Oh lud !—How can you be so barbarous to use me thus only for a little innocent frolic !’

Cleantbes. ‘ Shameless wretch !—Can you call it an innocent frolic to come to the door of a public coffee-house and send in for your gallant !—Had I not happen’d to be there,—had not these eyes and ears been witnesses of your guilt, you might, and doubtless would have deny’d, forsworn it.’

Aglaura. ‘ I meant no harm ;—I only wanted to rally him a little about something I had heard concerning him.’

Cleantbes. ‘ Infamous abandon’d prostitute,—have I not an hundred times insisted on your never speaking to that fellow more, nor to that other coxcomb, Le Brune, yet had you not the front to run arm in arm this morning with the one into the Vineyard, in the face of the whole Mall, and at night came in pursuit of the other !—But this is no time for expostulation, —I am convinced of the injury you have done me, and will punish you accordingly.—Come, strip.’

Aglaura. ‘ Oh lud !—what do you mean !’

Cleantbes. ‘ You have a raging fever in your blood, which I have bethought me of a more effectual method to cure than all the doctors in Europe could prescribe ;—therefore strip, I say.’

While he was speaking he began to tear off part of her upper garments ; — she struggled, — fell on her knees, — wept, — pray'd, beseech'd him to forgive her, — vow'd never to offend him more ; — but all in vain, he remain'd inexorable to her entreaties, — remorseless to her griefs, and forced her, with his sword pointed to her breast, to pluck off every thing, 'till she was reduced to her birth-day suit, and lay at his feet quite naked, and trembling for the issue of her fate.

The vindictive husband then snatch'd her rudely from the earth, and taking fast hold of both her shoulders plung'd her into the river, keeping her under water 'till she was almost strangled, then suffer'd her to raise her head ; but it was only in order to renew her torments, for the moment he found she had recovered breath he press'd her down again, — so that without being drown'd she felt all the agonies which that kind of death inflicts.

Weary'd, I believe, tho' not glutted, as I afterwards found, with the exercise of his revenge, he threw her on the grass, where she lay for some minutes without motion, and in all appearance without breath ; — never had life so much the shew of death ; yet was it chiefly fear that had so much overcome her ; for she lifted herself up with more agility than I could have imagin'd, on hearing him say,

Cleantus. ‘ The operation is now over, — you may put on your cloaths and prepare for going home.’

As much as the fright had seiz'd her spirits, as the cold had benumb'd her limbs, these words enabled her to rear herself and begin to gather up her

her habiliments, part of which lying scatter'd at some distance, Cleanthes, with a contemptuous air, kick'd nearer to her.—She wrapp'd up her shivering body as well as she could, for I cannot call it dressing, and as soon as she had done, Cleanthes bid her follow him,—which she did, tho' ready to sink at every step she took.

I kept pretty near to them, and found that the coach which brought them thither had, by his orders, waited their return at the Park wall;—he went hastily into it, but poor Aglaura was too feeble to reach the foot-stool without the assistance of the coachman:—they drove away, and I went home so much astonish'd at what I had seen, that I had not power to make any reflections on it for some time.

My mind however, grew more settled by a night's repose, and, impatient to know how they would behave to each other after what had pass'd between them, I went directly to their house;—Cleanthes was up alone and at breakfast.—Soon after my entrance a servant-maid came in and said to him,

Maid. ‘ Sir, my lady has call'd for a dish of chocolate, but I would not presume to carry any up without your permission, as your orders last night were so positive that she should be fed with nothing but water-gruel and dry bread.’

Cleanthes. ‘ Why then do you trouble me now? — Do you think I gave orders at night to reflect them in the morning? — Be gone, and let me hear no more of it.’

The maid withdrew, and I follow'd her to the room where Aglaura was now lodg'd, which was indeed a wretched garret;—she was in bed weeping, but on the maid's repeating the commands of Cleanthes, her tears flew faster,—

she

she wrung her hands, —— she beat her breast ; —— but it is more easy for the reader to conceive her despair than for me to express it, —— so I shall only say the spectacle was too moving, — I could not bear it, but left the house immediately, and return'd not thither 'till after eight or ten days, in which time the town was appriz'd of the suffering of Aglaura, except the ducking part, and spoke of the strange change of Cleanthes in the manner I have already related.

On my next visit Cleanthes had with him an elderly lady, who I afterwards perceived was his aunt ; —— she came, it seems, to persuade him to treat his transgressing wife with less severity ; —— the discourse between them was as follows :

Lady. ‘ I am as sensible as you can be of the faults of Aglaura, and the dishonour she has brought upon you ; yet, my dear nephew, you demean yourself by using in this fashion a woman who, though unworthy, is still your wife.’

Cleanthes. ‘ Madam, I can no longer think of her as a wife, nor even as a woman ; but as a dog that had bit me ! — a serpent that had stung me ! ’

Lady. ‘ Put her then out of your house.’

Cleanthes. ‘ That would be giving her an opportunity of disgracing me more by her prostitutions ; — no, since I have not proofs for a divorce I will confine her here 'till I can send her for ever from my sight : — I have already wrote to a tenant of mine in the farthest part of Yorkshire, — he will be in town next week, and take her with him to his house.’

The good lady took her leave, after having heard and approv'd this resolution, which, as I have been since inform'd, he put in execution as he had said.

The

The C O N C L U S I O N.

HERE, O reader! a total stop is put to my endeavours to oblige thee! — nature has baffled all my vain precautions to preserve my little virgin in her native purity: — the woman whom I appointed to attend her, accidentally dropp'd from her pocket the picture of a very lovely youth; — the girl, unfortunately for me, as well as for thee, took it up, was charm'd with it; — sleep renew'd the pleasing image in her mind, and added life and motion to it; — she dream'd that it was her bedfellow, — that it kiss'd, embrac'd, and lay within her arms; — so that in spite of all my cares, and without ever having seen the substance of a man, she has received an idea of the difference of sexes.

Her pretty fingers no longer have the power to cleanse my Tablets, — the dialogue last repeated remains still unexpung'd, and leaves no room for any future impression. — How grievous a disappointment to me! — how terrible a mortification! — but we must all submit to destiny, which compels me now to bid thee eternally adieu! — adieu! — adieu!

F I N I S.

